

# Overgeared

– 템빨 –

- Part 6 -

-Author-  
Park Saenal

## CHAPTER 201

---

[You have failed to observe the target's skill.]

She tried a few more times but it was the same result. Euphemina became certain.

"A Saintess is a class that has at least a unique rating."

"Based on what?"

Laue! made a disbelieving expression, causing Euphemina to explain.

"A Duplicator has a clear limit as an epic class. It's impossible for me to duplicate skills that have a higher rating than myself."

"In other words... You failed to duplicate Ruby's skill?"

"Yes. The only skills that I have failed to duplicate after raising my insight to a certain level belonged to Grid and Agnus... It is an experience I haven't suffered in a long time."

"Agnus?" The 7th ranked Agnus was known to have an epic class. He was surprised by Euphemina's words. "Agnus is an epic class, so isn't he equivalent to you? So why did your Skill Observation fail?"

"He must have a growth type hidden class."

"Like Hurent?"

"That's right. Growth type classes are considered to have a higher rating than epic classes, so I can't duplicate his skills."

Agnus was someone thoroughly wrapped in a veil of mystery. He never showed up in public. Traces of him could only be found in the rankings list or from NPCs. He changed his appearance every time, so there were rumors that he was an NPC instead of a user, or a game operator, or so on.

However, Euphemina seemed to be familiar with Agnus, so this was an opportunity

for Lael.

“What exactly is Agnus’ class?”

“At first I thought he was a necromancer type, but considering the various features, it is more appropriate to call him a lich.”

“Lich? You mean an undead?”

Lich were one of the strongest undead. They transcended the concept of life and death, and were known to have infinite magic power. If Agnus was a lich, it was reasonable to assume that he was stronger than Grid.

“On the surface, he doesn’t seem to be an undead, but... It’s a bit difficult to explain. You’ll know if you meet him.”

Lael showed great interest. “Where should I go to meet him?”

“Aren’t you being very active? Are you perhaps thinking about trying to get Agnus as Grid’s subordinate? I would forget about it. Agnus is a very dangerous and abnormal figure. It isn’t possible to have a positive outcome when you get in touch with him.”

“...I will listen to you.”

Agnus wasn’t the important thing right now. Grid’s sister had obtained a hidden class that at least had a unique rating.

‘Did those siblings receive the blessing of the game gods?’

The older brother was the first legendary class, while the younger sister received a hidden class at level 1. It was clear that Grid and his sister had saved a country in a previous life.

‘Anyway, this is good.’

Grid’s power was grounded on the basis of being the best after Duplicator Euphemina and then Saintess Ruby joined. This would grow further if the Tzedakah Guild joined. Lael envisioned a brilliant future, causing his mind to spin faster than before.

‘Grid and his sister are fighting well, but it isn’t good to drag this out.’ A stamina system

existed for users. Stamina would decrease the longer the battle lasted, so even Grid would face a crisis. 'The golems are only concentrating on Grid. And the ancient weapons will probably explode every time they die. Then... '

Lauel shouted as he came up with a way to end this battle that lasted nearly 30 minutes.

"Grid! Drive all the golems towards the ancient weapons!"

"Eh?"

The golems were endlessly coming towards him! Grid was enjoying the battle due to Sehee's strong support, and he saw the golems as chunks of experience. He turned his gaze towards Lauel and then frowned.

"Isn't this too much? I have to deal with the ancient weapon at the same time. Do you want me to die?"

Grid didn't understand Lauel's intent. Unlike his sister, he was stupid, so it couldn't be helped.

*Kuwaaaang!*

"Dragon Claws." Lauel used an earth barrier to block the magic power heading towards Grid and shouted again. "Just do as I say! Focus on defeating the ancient weapon and run away immediately!"

In Satisfy, qi was a different concept of mana. For this reason, there was a separate class called the qigong master. The Anti-magic Shield wasn't immune to skills of a qigong master.

"Dragon's Whispers!"

[The amount of damage the target will receive has increased by 30%.]

*Kukukukung!*

The ancient weapon was affected by Lael's skill and started to twitch. Grid confirmed this and reached out to Jude.

"Jude, let me borrow your sword for a bit."

"I'll willingly do it."

*Float.*

Grid put the +8 Dainsleif in his inventory and used Fly. Sehee used Hope on him once again and Huroi cast a buff skill.

"Thank you."

He had full health. The strongest buff skill was nestled in his body. The best. An invincible feeling. There was nothing to fear in this world. It was just...

'The kan jajang would've already become soggy.'

Won't the food become tasteless? It was quite annoying, but he still felt good. His dear sister and companions. Now that they were enjoying Satisfy and relying on each other, Grid was truly happy. He had lived a lonely life without any friends, so this experience was truly precious to him.

*Ssik!*

Grid smiled with satisfaction and flew towards the ancient weapon that received the debuff from Lael. He was like an eagle flying towards his prey.

*Kiyaaak!*

The old golems and soul dolls ignored the others, only chasing after Grid. Grid was annoyed by them, but recalled Lael's words and ignored them.

*Kuoooh!*

The ancient weapon remained silent as Grid approached, then launched its magic power. It was evidence that the golems were intelligent.

"Che!"

Grid judged that it was too close to avoid and wore Doran's Ring.

[You have suffered 23,900 damage.]

[Healing effects will be reduced.]

[You have resisted.]

[The options of Doran's Ring and the Holy Light Armor have been applied to restore 35,850 health.]

'Healing effect reduction?'

That hadn't existed before. Grid became convinced. The ancient weapons were steadily evolving during the battle. They were optimizing themselves to kill Grid.

'It's great, but useless.'

The moon and stars were covered by a dark cloud of darkness. The '20% increase in damage in dark places' effect was applied, making Failure more powerful.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship!"

A dazzling sword dance unfolded continuously.

"Kill!"

"Link!"

"Transcend!"

There was a storm of blue-white energy blades as the skills were connected. The power was lacking compared to Linked Kill and Transcended Link, so the ancient weapon wasn't destroyed immediately. However, it was enough to release the Anti-magic Shield.

*Gruruk!*

Then Grid swapped weapons. He used Dainsleif instead of Failure. Dainsleif gained

additional attack power in proportion to the number of enemies, so it was just as good as Failure right now.

*Chaaeng!*

He used a skill straight after equipping it.

“Golden Flash!”

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

A ray of gold crossed the night sky like the sun.

*Kuaaaaah!*

The ancient weapon screamed as the ray penetrated through it.

*Kiik! Kiiik!*

The 800 golems following Grid were enraged. They watched the collapsing ancient weapon and howled like children losing their parents. In the midst of this turmoil, Euphemina yelled.

“Exploit! Thunder Storm! Light Sword! Blizzard!”

It was a feast of A-grade magic. She didn’t go through the process of chanting the spell, so the powerful magic perfectly hit the ancient weapon.

[You have destroyed an ancient weapon.]

[3,342,000 experience has been distributed.]

“Avoid it!”

Lauel shouted the moment the notification window popped up, and Grid responded by disappearing at full speed.

*Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!*

It was a close call. Immediately after Grid escaped from the range of the explosion, a strong explosion occurred around the body of the ancient weapon. Most of the 800 golems following Grid were swept away by the explosion and turned to ashes.

“Wow... This was what you intended.” Grid was full of admiration as he saw the result and recognized Lael’s intentions. He got goosebumps. “Lael, aren’t you really smart? The best.”

Lael bowed gracefully towards Grid, who was looking at him with envy.

“You are the one who is the best. I’m just your bridesmaid.”

‘... My hands and feet are shrivelling.’

Grid was suffering from Lael’s cheesy words when someone appeared in front of them. Euphemina had figured out the number of surviving golems.

“There are 43 old golems, 11 soul dolls and 9 ancient weapons remaining. This battle, let’s finish it.”

“Good.”

Grid handed Dainsleif back to Jude and gave a command.

“The golems are only focused on me. You don’t have to protect Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl anymore. Attack the ones after me.”

“Yes.”

Jude was better than Huroi and Lael when it came to simple combat ability. He was an idiot who couldn’t be assigned important missions, but Jude was a very dependable person on the battlefield. Once his rampage started, the surviving old golems and soul dolls were overwhelmed. They were beaten and became mere pieces of stone.

『 Jude... I’ve never heard of him, but he must be a named NPC. To obtain NPCs as knights, at a minimum, an S-grade quest needs to be cleared and affinity built up... Grid is truly amazing. 』

As the world was impressed by Jude, Grid was taking care of the remaining ancient weapons with Huroi, Lael and Euphemina. The old golems and soul dolls were no



longer obstructing them, so their speed at destroying the ancient golems was faster than before.

## CHAPTER 202

---

“Amazing! Amazing!”

The directors and PDs of the broadcasting stations relaying the Reinhardt war were excited. Grid’s companions played an active role against the golems and audience ratings were high, so it was natural to feel excited.

‘Grid is a genuine star!’

This golem army had smashed the 700 Giant Guild members led by the 3rd ranked Chris, whose battle power was evaluated as over the Tzedakah Guild in Satisfy. Indeed, Grid was a legend. Whenever he appeared in public, he overwhelmed the audience with his power, causing the audience ratings to rise every time he appeared. He created the buzzword ‘Praise God Grid.’

“It would be nice if he summoned Noe...”

However, human greed was endless!

The station PDs were hoping for the appearance of Noe, who was just as popular as Grid. If the cute Noe emerged, the audience ratings would clearly rise because the hearts of the children and female viewers would be captured.

On the other hand, the hosts’ mouths were dry from praising Grid’s group.

『 The orator’s buffs and debuffs are only applied once, but they are extremely effective. If they are used well, an orator can play a more active role than existing buffing classes. It’s a class that deserves to be reevaluated. 』

『 Reevaluated? Don’t you know about orators? Orators are a class that had been treated as top rankers by the nobles since the beginning. But they are difficult to find because they’re a difficult class to level up. 』

『 The advantage of an orator isn’t only the buffs and debuffs. A orator is basically a speech-giving class. They are politically useful. It is natural for the top rankers to be jealous of Grid for acquiring the 1st ranked orator. 』

『 Lael is truly worthy of his fame. He fully understands the qigong master class. Rather than acting aggressively, he serves as a supporter and assists Grid. 』

『 In fact, qigong masters are more suitable to be rear damage dealers rather than supporters. But since Grid is in the party, there's enough attack power. Therefore, his role in the group is changed. Lael's flexible mindset is great. 』

『 Above all, the best one is the user called Euphemina. She can cast all types of spells without chanting? It's obvious that she has a hidden class, and she might be stronger than Grid. Perhaps she is a legendary grade magician? 』

『 If you look at the fact that she doesn't show many S-grade magic, it's hard to imagine her as a legendary magician. It is more likely that she's a unique rated magician. Anyway, I am certain that she is better than Yura and Bondre. 』

『 I'm focused on the girl called Ruby. She is a complete beginner when looking at her clothing, but isn't she supporting her colleagues with tremendous amounts of healing? 』

『 Sometimes, there are people with unique tastes. There are many high level users who deliberately look like beginners... 』

『 Didn't the rare class Skin Creator recently appeared? The Skin Creator can freely change the appearance of items, right? Maybe the clothes she's wearing now are actually really dazzling. 』

『 Is that rough-looking wooden staff actually a unique-rated weapon? Hahaha, in any case, Grid is really great. He has the named NPC Jude, the 1st ranked orator, the 1st ranked qigong master as well as the best magicians and priest as his companions... It's clear that he has a great personality. 』

『 I agree with you 100 times over. He must be charming to attract such excellent people. Grid has to be a generous, charismatic, wise, and good man. 』

As the misunderstanding about Grid deepened, Grid's group was defeating the sixth ancient weapon. The remaining six ancient weapons were upgraded based on the information gathered from the destroyed ancient weapons.

[It is necessary to become tolerant to spiteful words.]

[Delete language comprehension feature.]

“This is pretty hard.”

It was hard for Grid to look relaxed. The ancient weapons became noticeably stronger every time one was destroyed. That’s why their combat power rose from 26,000 to 32,000. It was around the same level of the Awakened Guardian of the Forest. Grid’s party faced difficulties the moment the sixth ancient weapon was killed.

“Spiteful Tongue isn’t working.”

“The resistance to qi has increased, so my skills aren’t being applied properly.”

“The durability of the Anti-magic Shield has risen.”

“Kuk.”

Grid could feel the physical defense of the ancient weapons rising. He trembled.

“The golems grow as we fight. What type of freak made these monsters?”

They might be able to destroy some more, but it was difficult to predict how strong the remaining ancient weapon would be.

“There’s no chance of victory. We should retreat. Didn’t we do enough?”

“But if we retreat, Reinhardt will eventually collapse. The kingdom contribution that we earned will become useless.”

A skeptical mood began to form. Grid’s only method was to rely on Lael.

“Is there a solution?”

“The solution is simple. Destroy the remaining six ancient weapons simultaneously.”

“...”

It was an impossible task. Assuming that Grid alone could handle an ancient weapon, the rest of the group couldn't take care of even one ancient weapon. It was impossible to kill six ancient weapons at the same time, even if all of the 100,000 watching users joined.

However, Earl Steim noticed the situation and directly commanded the army.

"The only solution is to destroy those large golems at the same time. Winston's army! Everyone join forces to help my son-in-law defend this kingdom!"

"Ohhh!"

Earl Steim raised the morale of the army by appealing to the fact that his son-in-law was a legendary warrior! He was a seasoned leader and reorganized the army with the strongest knights of each region at the forefront, advancing them towards the six ancient weapons. His fighting spirit caught the aggro of the ancient weapons.

*Jeeook!*

The ancient weapons concentrated their magic power rays at Earl Steim.

"Father-in-law!"

Grid had a quest called 'Save Earl Steim.' The damage caused by the quest failure was a problem, but he also didn't want to see Irene sad.

"Damn bastards!"

He tried to fly at full speed to protect Earl Steim, but it was useless. The magic power rays far exceeded Grid's speed.

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

The six rays of magic energy struck Earl Steim and caused a powerful explosion. The soldiers near him flew away and became rags. Earl Steim at the center of the explosion must be reduced to ashes.

"Father-in-law...!"

Grid was shaken. She had the most beautiful smile, but he was pained at the thought

of his Irene crying for a while.

Then a familiar woman's voice was heard. "I'm sorry I'm late."

"...?"

Grid closed his eyes because he was afraid to confirm the death of Earl Steim. He slowly opened his eyes. Then he saw it.

"You struggled to fight without us."

The Tzedakah Guild. Armed with epic, unique and legendary items that had G engraved on them, Vantner and Toban protected Earl Steim while Jishuka and the others surrounded them.

"Everyone...!"

Jishuka spoke to the thrilled Grid. "Please give us a command, Captain."

It was the moment when the Tzedakah Guild expressed their intention to go under Grid.

Lauel shouted, "First of all, establish the guild!"

A minimum of 15 people were required to establish a guild. The golem army invasion had another quest for guilds, so this was a perfect opportunity to raise the guild experience. Grid grasped Lauel's intention and acted quickly.

"Establish Guild."

[To establish a guild, you need to get approval from the association.]

[You can set up the guild without an approval procedure because you are a high-ranking noble.]

[Please decide the name of the guild.]

"The guild name..."

Lauel prompted Grid.

“The guild name is a very important symbol for the guild. It should be a meaningful and cool name. Personally, I recommend Darkfire Masters, Blood Ice Makers, The Blessed of the Gods, Silver Dragons, etc.”

“...”

Grid had called himself overgeared since the time of the Neberius raid. It was a wordplay based on the templar knights. *(TL: In Korean, not English.)*

Grid really liked the word. The word was moved around his mouth. The guild name...

“Overgeared Knights is more extravagant than necessary... Let’s just stick to the simple Overgeared.”

“W-What?” Lauel was shocked. His face turned white and anger filled his eyes. “Overgeared, are you thinking properly? It’s completely childish! Elementary school students will laugh at the name! Please be joking!”

“Blood Ice Makers? I think Overgeared is a lot better than that.”

“What about Blood Ice Makers? It’s cool! On the contrary, what is Overgeared? This guild name will stick with us for the rest of all lives, so it needs to be better!”

Lauel was extremely opposed, but the reaction of the Tzedakah Guild members were unexpectedly positive.

“Overgeared... It clearly expresses the characteristics of the guild.”

“The names of the other guilds are too extravagant and childish. This is simple and clear.”

“Overgeared people belong to the Overgeared Guild! Kukuk, it’s simple and entertaining!”

“T-These crazy people...!”

Lauel felt like he was in a nightmare. He sent a look of help towards Huroi and Euphemina, but it was useless. Huroi only followed Grid’s will and Euphemina didn’t

care about the name of the guild.

In the end.

[‘Grid’ and 27 companions have established the Overgeared Guild.]

Guild Name: Overgeared

Level: 1 (0/100,000)

Reputation: 0

Master: Grid

Capacity: 28/30

Affiliation: The Eternal Kingdom

Alliances: North of the Eternal Kingdom.

Hostile Relationships: None

Inclination: An unconditionally favorable relationship with Winston.

Territory: None

“T-This is ridiculous... The guild name is Overgeared...? I am an overgeared!”

Lauel seemed like he received a really big shock. In fact, the name ‘Overgeared’ was favored by the public, so Lauel was the only one who didn’t like it. A new quest window appeared in front of Grid.

[Defense War II]

Difficulty Level: SS

The golem army was much more powerful than anyone expected.

The kingdom’s strongest guilds and armies couldn’t prevent the golems from advancing.



The most powerful golems called the ancient weapons have plunged the Eternal Kingdom into a crisis.

Defend the Eternal Kingdom by defeating them.

Only you are the last hope of the Eternal Kingdom. The anxious King Wiesbaden can only rely on you.

Quest Clear Conditions: Defeat the ancient weapons (0/6)

Quest Clear Rewards: One big city. 50,000 contribution to the kingdom. The guild level will rise by 2. Five million gold will be obtained.

Quest Failure: The likely collapse of the Eternal Kingdom.

It was clearly an opportunity. Grid ordered everyone, including the frustrated Lael.

“Defeat the six ancient weapons at the same time. Huroi! Toban! Buffs!”

It was the first time that the legendary Overgeared group left their footsteps in history.

## CHAPTER 203

---

“Overgeared! Let’s show the world the emergence of the Overgeared Guild and elevate our lord!”

[Your morale has increased.]

[Your attack power and magic attack power will significantly rise for the next attack.]

[The next attack will be a critical hit!]

The strongest buff skill of the 1st ranked orator, Morale Boost was applied to all guild members. The Tzedakah Guild members murmured about the overwhelming effect.

“Wow, the effect is really great.”

“It’s a buff that makes a deadly strike possible...”

Jishuka spoke to rile up Toban. “Shouldn’t the 1st ranked paladin prove that he isn’t lacking in comparison?”

Compared to the other guild members, his level was relatively low, but Toban was now level 280. He was at least 10 levels higher than Grid. He used a buff skill that could be called the ultimate skill of the second advancement paladin.

“God Judar’s Blessing!”

[All stats will increase by 20% for 5 minutes.]

[Your health and defense will increase by 30% for 10 minutes.]

“...!”

Laue! finally recovered from his shock of Grid calling the guild Overgeared.

“This is the best skill of the first ranked Judar paladin that I’ve only heard about!”

It was a great buff that was completely different from Huroi’s buff. All members of the Tzedakah Guild were truly monsters. Laue! was feeling admiration while Jishuka loaded a Super-special Jaffa Arrow.

“Then shall we begin?”

Grid made the unique rated ‘Salamander’s Horn’ for her, and it could be called the most powerful bow currently in existence. The disadvantage was its slow firing speed, but the attack power was ruthlessly high. It also increased the attack power of the fire attribute, so the compatibility with Jishuka was very good.

“Firecrackers.”

The woman called an expert archer, her bow skills had reached the realm of a god. It was the moment when the 1st ranked archer entered the battle.

*Syuok! Syu syu syu syu syuk!*

The only drawback of the Salamander’s Horn was its slow speed, and this was overcome with her rapid-fire speed skills, as she shot seven arrows with barely any time lapses between them. The arrows were aimed at the ancient weapon 2,300m ahead of her.

*Pepepepeong!*

It was amazing. The arrows flying alone exploded. Then like a firecracker, flames appeared at the end and added acceleration.

*Kuoooh!*

The ancient weapon felt danger. In order to counter the arrows, it opened its mouth and tried to launch the magic energy. Instead white magic power started to gather around the mouth. But Jishuka’s arrows didn’t give it time to charge its magic power. It struck the ancient weapon and caused another explosion.

*Kurururung.*

The massive body of the ancient weapon made a strange sound. Then a notification window appeared in front of Jishuka.

[The target's mana core has been shocked.]

[The target's magic power flow has been blocked.]

[The target can't use magic for three seconds.]

The effect of Firecracker worked properly. The Anti-magic Shield of the ancient weapon was temporarily released. The first ranked mixed magician Laella and the second ranked wind magician Zednos acted.

“Demon King's Tail Fire.”

“Tyrant's Hammer!”

Jishuka used her strongest skill.

“Phoenix Arrow!”

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

Everything in a straight line was swallowed up by the flames. The ancient weapon that Jishuka target was hit by black flames, a giant hammer and a mighty phoenix. Its eyes turned red as it looked around. It was asking its fellow golems for help.

But there was no one who could help it. The other five ancient weapons were in the same situation as him. All the ancient weapons were being beaten by the Overgeared members who had divided into several groups.

In particular, the ancient weapon being attacked by Regas was suffering the most.

*Pepeng!*

[The 5th combo has been achieved!]

[The effect of the 'Lightning Duke's Knuckles' has been activated, causing additional physical damage to the target.]

*Pepepeng!*

[The 6th combo has been achieved!]

[The effect of the 'Lightning Duke's Knuckles' has been activated, causing additional lightning damage to the target.]

*Kwang kwang kwang!*

[The 8th combo has been achieved!]

[The effect of the 'Lightning Duke's Knuckles' has been activated, causing additional physical and lightning damage to the target.]

*Jjejejeok! Kwang!*

[The 10th combo has been achieved!]

[The effect of the 'Lightning Duke's Knuckles' has been activated, causing Thunder Chariot to be triggered.]

*Kurururung!*

Was this person descended from the realm of the gods? A thunderous chariot fell from the sky and forced the ancient weapon on its knees. Then an eagle flew over its head and suddenly transformed into a human.

Beasts of Prey Toon. He wore silver wristblades with the G engraved on them and he

shouted like a lion.

[Weaken all nearby enemies.]

“Kukuk! Kuhahat! Now I will slice you up!”

Toon transformed into a werewolf and his greatly improved wristblades flashed. The ancient weapon had its whole body electrocuted so it couldn't cope and suffered great damage. On the other hand, the ancient weapon in front of the south wall staggered under the combined attacks of Pon and Vantner.

“Hap!”

*Jjejeong! Jjeejeeong!*

“Ura! Ura! Urahh~!

*Kwa kwang! Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

*Kuoooooh!*

The ancient weapon was unable to endure anymore and swung its arms. The agile spearman Pon moved away, while Guardian Knight Vantner defended himself with his shield.

“Uh...”

It was a terrible damage. Vantner failed to completely absorb the damage and stiffened from the aftermath. The ancient weapon was about to fire its magic power at him. Vantner realized this and screamed.

“Hey! Help me, Pon!”

“Are you stiffened right now? Just hold it.”

Instead of helping Vantner, Pon jumped forward using Vantner's shoulder. Then he aimed a skill towards the ancient weapon.

“Mach Spear!”

*Peeeeeeong!*

It was an unbeatable attack. The sonic spear passed through the thick head of the ancient weapon.

“Okay!”

Half of the head was broken and the ancient weapon staggered. Pon landed on the ground and cheered. Vantner glared at him angrily, “You jerk...! How dare you use a companion as a sacrifice? Eh? Did you feel good?”

Vantner had turned charcoal after being hit by the magic ray. He was truly angry, but Pon just shrugged.

“It’s called teamwork.”

“Shit! What is this teamwork?”

Vantner’s face turned red. He seemed like a boiled octopus, causing Pon to laugh. In the end, Vantner couldn’t bear it and swung his axe at Pon.

“Today I will kill you!”

“Try it if you can, bald bastard.”

“...”

The ancient weapon thought it was ridiculous. Fighting each other in front of it? This was an opportunity. It swung its arms at the fighting Pon and Vantner. But Pon once again easily avoided the attack, while Vantner defended with his shield.

The same pattern was repeated. The ancient weapon had only one choice. It ignored the fast Pon and tried to launch a magic ray towards the rigid Vantner. Vantner once again contemplated.

“Hey Pon! This time you should really help me! I will die this time! Yes?”

“Use your Invincible skill~”

Vantner had been putting points in stamina since the Malacus raid. Now his survival ability was as excellent as a cockroach's. Pon knew this better than anyone else, so he once again one-sidedly used Vantner as a tanker.

“True Illusion!”

*Kwaaaaaah!*

The ancient weapon fired magic power at Vantner, and at the same time, it was stabbed dozens of times. Pon made a satisfied noise as he saw it.

“My skills are indeed perfect.”

An axe flew at him.

“Those two are still acting like that.”

The city. Faker smiled as he watched Pon and Vantner in the distance. Faker told them, “Pay attention to the opponent in front of you. There was no room for cockiness.”

The 1st ranked assassin didn't participate in the National Competition. When the top rankers spent time at the National Competition, he focused solely on leveling up. As a result, he was now level 293 and 17th on the unified ranking.

He showed the result of his training.

*Papat! Pa pa pa pat!*

He created 20 clones and climbed the ancient weapons from all sides. The ancient weapon was in the middle of the city, so it was covered with the blood of many people. The humans were so weak that the golem disregarded them.

However.

“...!”

The ancient weapon was astonished. This was because the 20 daggers stabbed in its body caused it great damage. Holes were made in its solid body.

*Kwaaaaaah!*



These humans were unlike anyone the ancient weapon had encountered before, so it swung its arms like windmills to somehow shake them off. Faker didn't try to defend himself. Instead, he just moved forward. He moved in an incredibly agile manner and avoided the attack of the ancient weapon, rushing at its neck.

*Kyak!*

The confused ancient weapon opened its mouth to launch magic power.

"Thank you."

Faker threw five daggers into the mouth of the ancient weapon. The daggers exploded.

*Pepepepeok!*

Then another ancient weapon flopped to the ground. But its commitment was great. In the midst of its collapse, it swung its arm and attacked Faker. Faker was unable to freely move during the descent and was in a crisis. An assassin's health and defense was extremely low, so he could die from this attack.

'It is failure at a critical moment.'

The moment that Faker frowned, a lightning bolt struck from the sky. The lightning bolt was powerful enough to completely shift the orbit of the gigantic arm heading towards Faker. Faker shifted his gaze towards the person who prevented his death. Then he saw a beautiful blonde girl.

Faker cried out, "That girl...!"

"Euphemina...!"

Euphemina had completely shattered Faker's group in the past. Due to that, she climbed onto the Tzedakah Guild's kill list. However, that was in the past. The Tzedakah Guild didn't exist anymore. In the future, she would be a colleague.

Faker forgot about the past and thanked her.

"I owe you a debt."

Euphemina smiled awkwardly.

Among all the guild members, Ibellin wasn't shining as brightly.

"Laue! can you bind the ancient weapon with Dragon's Wings?"

"I can only bind it for one second."

"That will be enough."

Laue! was known as the strongest among the 10 Rookies and Ibelline was the second strongest. Once they joined forces, they showed amazing results.

"Wind Dragon's Wings!"

[The target's movements have been bound.]

"Laceration!"

[Laceration]

The target's body will be brutally torn open by Thorn. The target will receive fixed damage equal to 60% of their current health.

Skill Mana Cost: 500

Skill Usage Condition: Target must be in a bound state.

*Chwachachachak!*

The Thorn of Deep Grievance ripped through the ancient weapon with no mercy. The ancient weapon was severely damaged by a single strike and fell into a stunned state.

"..."

It was an incredible sight. The powerful ancient weapon lost 60% of its health in one shot? The attack power that Ibellin showed was within Grid's level, so Laue! was incredible confused. He was alarmed because this guy showed better skills than he

thought. But he pretended to be unconcerned.

“I guess even slugs have a talent for rolling around on the ground.”

Ibellin shouted angrily, “Who are you calling a slug? Dammit! I will soon be able to surpass you!”

LaueI snorted. “This is just the power of items.”

LaueI was also an overgeared person. On the other hand, Grid was confronting an ancient weapon in front of the inner wall.

“Have strength!”

King Wiesbaden desperately encouraged Grid from the walls. After a while, a satisfied smile appeared on Grid’s face.

“Transcended Link. Linked Kill.”

Subtle emotions crossed the faces of King Wiesbaden and the nobles. The 100,000 users in Reinhardt and the millions of viewers watched as two of the best skills were used in succession.

*Flash!*

A white light got rid of the darkness. Earl Steim watched the artificial white sky and shouted excitedly, “My son-in-law is a legend!”

## CHAPTER 204

---

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

20 blue-white energy blades flooded towards the ancient weapons.

『 It has come! The strongest skill! 』

The broadcast host shouted in a loud voice. The viewers' hands became sweaty. Reinhardt's 100,000 users was thrilled.

Grid felt joy.

[The fusion skill 'Transcended Link' has increased a level.]

[Transcended Link Lv. 2]

You will temporarily be in a transcended linked state.

A total of 20 strikes will be launched, dealing 180% attack power with each hit.

Every time a target is hit, they will be stiff for 0.1 seconds.

\* This skill doesn't share a cooldown with Transcend and Link.

Skill Mana Cost: 1,600

Skill Cooldown Time: 15 minutes.

There was an exhilarating feeling the moment the skill level rose. He immediately felt stronger. The storm leapt from Grid towards the stiffened ancient weapon. Then there was one rotation of Kill.

*Jeeeong!*

[Critical!]

[Failure's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[The Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[You have dealt 12,140,700 damage to the target.]

Using repulsive force, there was another rotation and a second blow.

*Jjejeong!*

[The Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[You have dealt 2,612,000 damage to the target.]

The third blow.

*Jjejejeok!*

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 1,205,800 damage to the target.]

The fourth blow.

*Jjeejeeong!*

[You have dealt 500,300 damage to the target.]

The fifth blow.

*Jjeejeeong!*

[Failure's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[The Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[You have dealt 5,579,000 damage to the target.]

Grid's basic stats were high and Toban's buff also played a huge role. The stats that had risen dramatically, the strongest skill and the absolute power of his weapon, this trinity proved to be extremely powerful. Grid felt extreme pleasure at dealing more than 10 million damage in one blow.

*Tak.*

Grid landed on the ground the moment that Transcended Link was finished.

*Kukukukukung...*

The ancient weapon became a complete rag. Shouts echoed from Reinhardt.

"Waaahhhhhhhh!"

"Grid! Grid! Grid!"

Hundreds of thousands of NPCs chanted Grid's name. If it wasn't for Grid, the king and royal family would've died and perhaps their kingdom would've been lost. For them, Grid was the hero of their kingdom.

King Wiesbaden was thrilled to tears. "Thanks to the great hero, the 400 year history of the kingdom has been preserved...!"

The nobles were convinced as they saw it.

'Earl Steim will surely gain the title of duke.'

‘His son-in-law will at least be an earl... ’

The key person of the kingdom was now destined to become Earl Steim. The politically complicated nobles felt a grudge towards Grid.

『 Truly God Grid! He’s on a different dimension! 』

The broadcasting anchors were very excited.

『 Today, we have learned one fact! Grid is the strongest! There is no doubt about it! This talent in the National Competition wasn’t just a bubble! 』

『 In fact, it isn’t just Grid’s power. Grid absorbed the power of the Tzedakah Guild while everyone was watching. Today is an important day where the power dynamics of Satisfy will rapidly change. 』

『 From Bairan Village to the present day... Grid is really becoming a legend. 』

『 He will be the first user to become an earl. How much power will he have as an earl? I’m already curious and excited. 』

『 Will it stop at just getting the title of an earl? In my opinion, it’s different... 』

All six ancient weapons were humiliated. Soon, the golem invasion would end. Everyone believed it.

Lauel spoke, “Grid, give us a signal so that we can finish the ancient weapon at the same time.”

The ancient weapons had to be killed simultaneously. It would be seriously troublesome if the survivors evolved in real time. Grid nodded and shouted, “I will count to three. One! Two!”

“ ... ”

The guild members concentrated their power. They were prepared to kill the ancient weapons the moment Grid countered to three.

“Three!”

Finally, the moment that Grid counted to three! Each guild team made their final strikes against the ancient weapons. Pon and Vantner were the problem.

“I will finish it!”

“No, me!”

The two people’s argument eventually caused an accident. The two people’s silly pride meant they struggled over who would deal the final blow, and eventually couldn’t finish off the ancient weapon.

[High fire and lightning resistance are necessary.]

[Minerals that have high conductivity must be excluded from the body.]

[The body will become smaller by abandoning the massive minerals. It will restore the lost agility.]

[The firing rate of magic power should be increased.]

[Instead of lowering the power of the mana, rebuild the magic circles so that it is dispersed better.]

[Tolerance to edged tools should be increased.]

[Tolerance to explosions should be increased.]

[It is determined that flying ability should be acquired.]

*Clink! Clink clink.*

The ancient weapon was only partially destroyed by Mach Spear. It started rebuilding its body based on the information left behind by the deaths of the other five ancient weapons. It was like a cube. The 8m tall body was repeatedly folded and stretched. Then light flashed and it had a new appearance.

*Grrr.*

The transformed ancient weapon looked like a soul doll. It had a height of 2m. The body resembled that of a human. At first glance, it seemed weaker, but that was only



the outer appearance. The presence felt from it was unusual.

“Are you crazy?”

“No, are your brains working? What are you doing?”

The guild members scolded Pon and Vantner. The situation became like this because of their futile pride, so the atmosphere cooled. Pon and Vantner thought they had to make up for their mistakes.

“We will handle this.”

“I will clean up my shit!”

The two people cooperated for the first time in ages. They held their weapons in a serious manner and rushed to the evolved ancient weapon. But it was useless.

“Eh?”

“Why has its defense increased so much when its size is smaller?”

Pon and Vantner’s spear and axe didn’t do much damage to the evolved ancient weapon. The ancient weapon seemed to laugh at the two people and raised a finger.

“...?”

What did this mean? The two people were dumbfounded by the actions of the ancient weapon. Then two rays of magic power were fired at their hearts.

[You have suffered 18,010 damage.]

[Healing effects will be reduced.]

“Cough!”

Vantner lost 30% of his health despite his legendary rated armor. Then what about Pon, who was a damage dealer?

[You have suffered serious damage!]

[You can't regain your mental state.]

[Healing effects will be reduced.]

Pon lost 60% of his health at once and became stunned. The evolved ancient weapon was approaching him.

“What...?”

Pon turned pale. The ancient weapon head-butted him.

“Hope!”

Sehee urgently used her healing skill, but the healing effect was reduced due to the debuff. He was on the verge of dying. The guild members came out to save him. Toban stood in front of him and used a defense skill, while Jishuka, Laella and Zednos attacked from the rear. The damage dealers, led by Regas and Faker, immediately cast their ultimate skills.

But.

*Peeeeeeong!*

The evolved ancient weapon exerted overwhelming power. The Anti-magic Shield it unfolded defeated all magic while avoiding Jishuka's arrows at the same time. Then it dealt great damage to Regas and Faker. Finally, the magic power rays were fired everywhere and casualties followed.

“...It's the end.”

Vantner thought it was over. He felt guilty when watching his colleagues be hurt because of him. Someone placed a hand on his shoulder. It was a large, powerful and trustworthy hand. It was full of calluses, like the hand of a warrior or a blacksmith. It was Grid's hand.

“Sorry...!” Vantner couldn't lift his head. He didn't blame Grid for resenting him. But

Grid was smiling.

“Didn’t I tell you? I will be your strength.”

The day he asked the Tzedakah Guild to come under him. Grid had asked them to be his strength. He also vowed to be their strength. Grid was prepared to defend that promise now.

‘He has changed again.’

Vantner and the guild members were very shocked. It was surprising that Grid, who normally hated any losses, had matured even further. As everyone watched, Grid summoned the worst pet.

“Nyang!”

It was the best demonic beast of hell. He appeared with shining eyes.

“Will you give me something delicious today? Nyang!”

“Perhaps. It might be the most delicious prey you’ve ever eaten.”

The reason that Grid hadn’t summoned Noe during the battle was because of jealousy.

Noe had far more fans than him. So if Noe played an important role in public, Grid was afraid that his popularity would be completely overshadowed. Therefore, Grid was determined to end this battle with his own strength. But he was unable to measure the combat strength of the evolved ancient weapon. Grid predicted it was at the same level as Hell Gao who had been weakened twice.

Grid had just used Transcended Link and Linked Kill, so it wasn’t an enemy he could face right now. He was forced to depend on Noe.

“The fan cafe numbers will go up again...”

Grid swallowed his regret.

“Swallow it.”

“Nyaang!”

Noe flew away immediately. Then he opened his mouth and swallowed the evolved ancient weapon.

[The memphis has taken part of the target's soul.]

[There will be a 50% decline in the target's main stats for 3 seconds.]

[The stats taken from the target will be transferred to the master.]

[Stamina has increased by 2,133.]

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship! Kill!”

It was lucky. A critical, as well as the option effects of Failure and the Holy Light Gloves were applied. The ancient weapon’s health and defense was greatly reduced, so it was forced to suffer great damage. The guild members unleashed their offensive towards it.

In particular, Euphemina used the S-grade magic that she saved.

*Kwaaaaah!*

The ancient weapon resisted as much as it could. But the minimum level of the Overgeared Guild members was 270. The one with the lowest level was Grid. The evolved ancient weapon continued to be swallowed by Noe and couldn’t endure their onslaught for long.

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

Sehee’s level kept rising continuously while using the wide-area heal. It was great for Grid. Then the ancient weapon finally died. As it died, it dropped an item called ‘Braham’s Message.’

‘Braham...! Is he the cause of this?’

Grid wanted to read the message right away. But he had to put it off for a while. King Wiesbaden himself was running over.

“Thank you! Thank you!”

The king grabbed Grid’s hands and shouted. He reigned as the absolute person since his birth, so it was amazing to see him bow his head.

Now only the rewards were left. Grid headed to the palace with the Overgeared Guild. The reporters tried to follow to relay the situation, but they were stopped by the guards.

Lauel gave Grid advice. “Grid, you should ask the king to allow them to come. We need to inform the world about how much you and the Overgeared Guild has grown from today’s achievement. This is an opportunity to make everyone look up to us.”

Lauel was Grid’s adviser. Grid had never once suffered damage from his words. Thus, he accepted Lauel’s advice.

After that.

King’s Wiesbaden gratitude to Grid’s group was relayed to the world in real time. Grid’s reputation skyrocketed.

It was the first time that Director Yoon Sangmin of the S.A. Group reacted positively to him.

“Yes, this is like a legendary class.”

The activities of a unique existence that caused a positive influence. He was delighted that many users would want to be Grid and would play Satisfy even harder.

## CHAPTER 205

---

In this ‘Golem Army Invasion’ episode, the army of the Eternal Kingdom was helpless.

Not only did 1,000 golems advance to the capital, but the hundreds of thousands of troops couldn’t eradicate them.

On the Internet, the netizens laughed at the fact that the Eternal Kingdom couldn’t do anything. They ridiculed King Wiesbaden and the nobles, stating that they were raising dogs instead of recruiting soldiers.

‘They don’t know.’

The Eternal Kingdom wasn’t weak. Rather, they were strong. The evidence was that the Eternal Kingdom had maintained its position of neutrality for many years.

‘But this time, their opponents were too bad.’

The golem army was unreasonably strong. In fact, the Giant Guild and 100,000 users weren’t able to compete with the golems.

‘Even I was barely able to destroy a soul doll, but the people of Grid’s group are monsters...’

Huroi, Lauel, Euphemina and Grid. Grid already had powerful users and he absorbed the Tzedakah Guild while the world was watching. It was obvious that Grid’s power would become stronger than the Giant Guild or Snake Guild in the future.

‘Overgeared... Should I apply? My life will be set if I could join.’

Reinhardt was busy with recovery efforts.

“Can you help me?”

“I need a hand.”

The soldiers and residents gave quests to join the restoration work. However, the 304th ranked Happy ignored them and headed towards the royal palace.

‘There are more people than I thought.’

Thousands of users were gathered in a huge training ground. They were people who made great achievements in the ‘Fight the Golems’ quest. It was a small number considering that 100,000 users gathered in Reinhardt.

The administrators gave them their rewards in turn.

“You are the 16 member squad that destroyed an old golem? It was hard. I want to thank you on behalf of the kingdom. You will be awarded with 300 gold and 100 kingdom contribution.”

300 gold was worth 360,000 won. The users were quite satisfied. Sometimes, they looked with envy as a party that killed more than two old golems appeared.

“Ohh! Sir Happy!” Once Happy’s turn came, the administrator was very enthusiastic. “Many soldiers and people witnessed you becoming active on the battlefield. You took on an old golem and soul doll alone? You will be awarded with 1,900 gold and 800 kingdom contribution. I am grateful for your defense of the kingdom.”

The users made a fuss.

“Wow, amazing. He defeated an old golem and soul doll alone?”

“1,900 gold... I’m envious...”

“But isn’t Happy a ranker?”

“That’s right. He’s in the 300s or 400s?”

“Kyah~ as expected from a ranker.”

Happy snorted at the users’ envious gazes.

‘They shouldn’t be envious of me.’

Happy’s gaze turned towards the golden group in the distance. At this moment, the king was paying direct attention to Grid. How much would Grid’s group be rewarded? Happy was restless. He wanted to log out and watch the awards ceremony on TV.



‘The legendary great magician...’

Grid hadn’t thought that Braham was such a great person. A person who had already died for hundreds of years had moved golems that caused a kingdom to fall into crisis. Braham’s ability was mind-boggling. But why did he invade the Eternal Kingdom?

‘Whatever the reason, I don’t like it.’

Due to that damn crazy magician, Sehee and his father-in-law almost died. Grid wanted to check what was contained in Braham’s Message.

‘However, I have to receive this first.’

The brilliant golden awards ceremony.

“Glory to Viscount Grid!”

*Cheek!*

The soldiers saluted as soon as Grid’s party entered. It was unbelievable that they had just suffered from an invasion and lost family and friends. Grid was impressed by how strong their minds were.

‘I remember my days as a soldier.’

Grid’s military service wasn’t good, but now he glorified those memories. Grid was proud of the soldiers who did their duty. At this moment, he felt a sense of gratitude to the Korean soldiers who were suffering to defend the country. It was sad that the world still wasn’t united.

‘Aren’t North Korean women pretty as well? I wish we could be unified.’

*Thump, thump.*

Grid walked straight through with an upright posture. He had great physical strength and concentration due to his stats, so dignity radiated from him. The king seated on the throne and the nobles gulped.



‘Indeed, this is the appearance of a legendary warrior. There are no chinks.’

‘He has a deep look in his eyes. It’s like the ocean.’

‘I am envious of that firm waist and broad shoulders... I would be able to love more women if I had that body in my youth... ’

When armed with the Holy Light Crown, Grid’s dignity exceeded 850 points. This was a figure that surpassed those of the major nobles of one kingdom, so it had a tremendous effect. The nobles forgot that Grid was a commoner and gazed at him with envy.

“Thank you, once again.”

Wiesbaden expressed his gratitude again from his throne. He couldn’t imagine that the cause of this incident was Grid, so he just considered Grid as his savior. But the important thing was that Grid also didn’t know he was the culprit.

Grid showed a wait-and-see attitude.

“If it wasn’t for you, this kingdom might’ve disappeared from history.”

Grid currently had the upper hand. He judged that there was no need for him to show humility.

“I hope that Your Majesty will show me your sincerity.”

It was a rude comment to the king of a nation. If Grid was a normal person, the king would’ve been very unhappy and the nobles would’ve resented him. However, Grid had high dignity and was the hero of the kingdom. No one questioned Grid’s words. To them, Grid just looked like a charming figure. Grid would be praised as manly even if he took off his pants.

“Earl Aden.”

The king called the person in charge of finances. Then an old nobleman came forward and said, “First of all, I will reward the achievements of Baroness Jishuka and the other 21 people who joined the battlefield later.”

The Tzedakah Guild stepped forward as they were called.

Earl Aden conveyed King Wiesbaden's will.

“Baroness Jishuka and 21 others have saved Earl Steim and defended their kingdom, helping Viscount Grid defeat six of the ancient weapons. You will be awarded 20,000 gold and 10,000 kingdom contribution. In addition, they will be given the title of Viscount for their loyalty to their kingdom.”

“We are much obliged.”

The compensation was as they expected. The Tzedakah Guild members were completely satisfied. The media were excited.

『 The experts speculate that there should be 20 users who became nobles in Satisfy. Among them, the only viscounts are Grid, Zibal and Chris. 』

『 But now, 22 more viscounts are born. In addition, all 22 people are Grid's subordinates. They can appoint three knights each, so the result is that Grid has around 70 knights. This is a truly tremendous power. 』

The earl continued.

“Huroi, Lauel, Euphemina, Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl. You joined forces with Grid to defeat 733 old golems, 187 soul dolls and 12 ancient weapons. If you hadn't acted, this country would be in a great crisis. You will be honored as a hero of the kingdom, receive 442,900 gold and 184,800 kingdom contribution, as well as the title of Earl.”

Numerous notification windows popped up in front of the five people.

[The title 'Kingdom's Hero' has been obtained.]

[The title 'First Earl' has been obtained.]

[You have become an earl of the Eternal Kingdom.]

[In accordance with the laws of the Eternal Kingdom, an earl can have 10,000 soldiers and five knights, and can have up to three spouses. You will receive a monthly salary of 3,000 gold.]

[Kingdom's Hero]

A hero who saved the Eternal Kingdom from a crisis.

\* All stats +120.

\* The highest reputation throughout the Eternal Kingdom.

[First Earl]

A user has become an earl for the first time.

\* Dignity +200

\* Charm +500.

\* If you have more than 500 charm, people of both sexes will show great favor towards you.

『 Earl...? 』

The reporters of each broadcasting station were astonished.

『 It's amazing. Didn't the kingdom originally have a limit on the number of senior nobles? To appoint five earls in one day... 』

『 It means they are big enough to make the Eternal Kingdom endure the financial bleeding. 』

『 If they are earls, then... Grid should become at least a marquis. 』

『 Grid is truly amazing. He's writing a new legend every time. 』

『 ... Sexy Schoolgirl didn't do anything during the battle, but she was still counted? 』

『 ... 』

Five earls were born, and all of them were Grid's subordinates. The world became frenzied at the breaking news. Huroi, Lauel and Euphemina were pleased at gaining

more rewards than expected.

But Sehee and Yerim didn't care.

"Is an earl good?"

"Perhaps?"

"Is 442,900 gold a lot?"

"Well, I don't know."

"..."

Lauel sighed as he looked at the two girls. People who were born with gold spoons couldn't perceive how good they had it.

'I wish I had a brother or sister like Grid too...'

As Lauel was feeling jealousy, Grid was receiving his rewards.

"Viscount Grid, you led your knights and colleagues to defeat 733 old golems, 187 soul dolls and 12 ancient weapons. Your achievements can't be denied. You will be praised as the country's hero..."

"The next part will be a burden for Earl Aden."

King Wiesbaden got up from the throne. Then he congratulated Grid instead of Earl Aden.

"Viscount Grid will be given 500,000 gold, an infinite amount of kingdom contribution and the large city Reidan. In addition, you will be awarded the title of duke and your statue will be set up in the Hall of Fame, keeping you alive to the next generation."

[The title 'Kingdom's Hero' has been obtained.]

[The title 'First Duke' has been obtained.]

[You have become a duke of the Eternal Kingdom.]

[Depending on the historical background of the continent, a duke has no limit on their expansion of power. The royal family won't be able to openly bind you.]

[Please note that there will be repercussions if you expand your power to the extent that it infringes on the royal family's authority.]

[If a statue is made in the Hall of Fame, special effects will occur.]

[First Duke]

A user has become a duke for the first time.

\* Dignity +600

\* Charm +800.

[As a prominent figure, your reputation across the continent has risen by 10,000.]

"I want you to pledge eternal loyalty to the royal family."

"I, Grid..."

Grid was about to pledge to Wiesbaden when Lauel urgently sent him a whisper.

*–Only swear allegiance to King Wiesbaden, not the royal family.*

Grid didn't understand. But he did as Lauel said.

"I, Grid, swear eternal loyalty to Your Majesty."

"..."

Some nobles frowned. In particular, the princes' faces filled with anger. However, King Wiesbaden was over 70 years old and in a state of considerable decline. He didn't find any issue with Grid's remark and smiled.

On this day.

New articles praising Grid were spread all over the Internet. The number of fan cafes

for Grid increased exponentially. But since the number of Noe's fan clubs increased more, Grid was struck with a sense of defeat.

## CHAPTER 206

---

After Grid became a duke.

“Thank you. Thanks to you, the kingdom was protected and my position rose. It was the luck of a lifetime that I could get you as a son-in-law.”

Earl Steim became a marquis. It was appreciated that he dispatched more troops than anyone else and that Grid was his son-in-law. A marquis had a son-in-law that was a duke. Earl Steim’s faction now became the largest in the kingdom. All of Marquis Steim’s authority would be inherited by Irene, so this was a good thing for Grid.

“I will ask you to continue looking after my daughter, Duke Grid.”

“I understand, Marquis Steim.”

“But when will you give me a granddaughter? Duke Grid.”

“We are working on it, Marquis Steim.”

“I should prepare some healthy food for you! Hahahat!”

“It is only once a month...”

“Huh? Once a month?”

“I’m just talking to myself. Ignore it. Hahaha!”

The two people were so excited that they didn’t notice the media focusing on them.

『 Earl Steim... No, doesn’t the relationship between Marquis Steim and Grid seem really good? 』

『 That’s right. Based on the contents of the conversation, it seems like a father and son-in-law relationship. 』

『 Did Marquis Steim have a daughter? 』

『 He has only one. The lady of Winston, Irene 』

『 Heok...! That beauty? 』

『 She is a beauty among beauties. She is a person who always occupies the top ranks in NPC popularity polls. A big uproar occurred when it was announced that she was married. To think that her marriage partner is a user instead of an NPC, and that he was Grid... 』

『 Hah! 』

The broadcasters sighed. They were envious of Grid to the point that their stomachs hurt. Among the viewers, the men were throwing their remote controls and there was also a fuss on the Internet.

*-He married Irene, but still has Yura and Jishuka?*

*-A married couple can sleep together once a month...*

*-Hasn't the marriage lasted eight months in Satisfy time? So at least eight times...*

*-Damn! My Irene was defiled!*

*-Most important, Irene is the sole successor of Marquis Steim. If Marquis Steim dies, Grid will inherit.*

*-Crazy ⇨⇨⇨⇨*

*-By the way. In the midst of this, don't you think that Euphemina, Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl are pretty?*

*- ◯ ◯ They are in the same class as Yura and Jishuka.*

*-So many beautiful women are around Grid... Furthermore, how much of Marquis Steim's power will Grid take on later? Hah... I'm really envious of God Grid.*

As more curses than praise about Grid started to spread on the Internet, Grid was looking at several notification windows.



[The quest 'Save Earl Steim' has been completed.]

[Affinity with Marquis Steim has risen to the maximum. Marquis Steim will even jump into a fire for you.]

[The quest 'Defense War II' has been completed.]

[The kingdom contribution of the Overgeared Guild has increased by 50,000.]

[The level of the Overgeared Guild has increased by 2.]

[5 million gold has been acquired.]

[You have acquired the big city Reidan.]

Apart from the 500,000 gold he received from the king, Grid was able to acquire another 5 million gold from the quest reward. 5.5 million gold. It was equivalent to 6.6 billion won. It was the first time Grid made such a huge amount of money at once.

'The quest reward is much higher than the price of a legendary item...'

Considering the contents of the quest, it was a satisfactory amount. But there was also a sense of dissatisfaction. He thought it would be more profitable to go around clearing quests than working hard at making items.

'The problem is how often quests like this will occur.'

Of course, it wasn't often. The probability of such large quests happening was very low. Grid thought about Braham's soul, scattered in labyrinths across the continent.

'I hope that he continues to invade the kingdom in the future.'

Wouldn't he become a tycoon if he defended the kingdom every time Braham attacked? Lauel approached the giggling Grid and spoke, "Your expression is too sneaky. Perhaps, are you thinking of the 5 million gold earned by completing the guild quest as your personal property?"

"If it isn't my property, than whose is it?"

Lauel sighed with a look of deep disappointment and explained to Grid. “Of course, it is the guild’s property. The rewards earned by clearing the guild quest will obviously be invested in the guild.”

“What? I have to do that?”

“It is possible for you to swallow it up alone. The problem is the credit. Do you want to disappoint the guild members?”

“...”

Grid turned pale. He even broke out into a sweat. He was a person who only acted for the purpose of money.

Lauel soothed him, “Have a broader perspective. If you invest that 5 million gold into our development, you will receive bigger profits in the future. Please think wisely and shake off this small regret.”

Grid listened to him. Grid was aiming for the position of king, rather than being a duke. He was determined to make a fortune by becoming the king of a kingdom. Investing in order to reach that goal wasn’t a waste.

At that time, King Wiesbaden yelled out.

“I will hold a banquet for Duke Grid and the Overgeared Guild!”

“Thank you for Your Majesty’s grace.”

Lauel thanked him and the quick-witted members did the same. However, the important Grid was standing at a distance.

“What are you doing?” Lauel asked.

Then Grid spoke with embarrassment.

“I have to eat my kan jajang.”

Due to its nature, the speed at which the kan jajang became soggy was slower than ordinary jajangmyeon. So Grid was hoping that it wasn’t completely wasted yet.

Laue! frowned, “Don’t say strange things and please attend the banquet.”

Laue! also tasted the food called jajangmyeon when he visited South Korea. He thought it was a delicious, salty food. But it wasn’t good enough to postpone the king’s banquet. In the end, Grid was too embarrassed to log out.

‘My 7,000 won...’

Grid tried to soothe his mind as his stomach hurt.



Reinhardt Palace where the king resided was luxurious and spectacular. There was nothing missing.

“This garden is seven times as big as Winston Castle’s garden.”

“There are six training grounds behind the barracks. I could build some buildings on how big the land here is.”

“I can see gold and jewels every time I turn my head. Amazing.”

The live broadcast to the world was finished. Grid and the Overgeared members got to look around the palace while the banquet was being prepared. Grid was the only one grumbling while everyone else was fascinated by the scale and beauty of the palace.

“My kan jajang...”

“Why do you keep saying that? Is the state not good?”

“What is kan jajang? Is it the name of an item?”

The guild members were curious while Sehee and Yerim were freaked out.

“500,000 million...?”

“5-5-5-500 million?”

Huroi held a calculator in his hand and nodded. “When comparing the Korean won

and the gold exchange rate, it is exactly 531,480 million.

It was the value of the 442,900 gold they received as the quest reward. Sehee and Yerim were stunned. The two girls' mouths dropped open for a while before they said something completely frustrating.

"Was it originally this easy to make money?"

It was a misunderstanding. The two girls had only been playing Satisfy for a few hours. They mistook Satisfy for a great game that made everyone rich. Lauel was frustrated and explained it to the two girls.

"Ordinary people can't earn a huge sum from Satisfy, even if they invest all their time. The two of you could achieve this great luck due to Grid."

Sehee and Yerim's eyes shone.

'My brother was a bigger man than I thought.'

'Youngwoo oppa is first-rate husband material.'

Jishuka frowned as she watched the two girls from afar.

"Sexy Schoolgirl? Who is this child? Is she looking at Grid?"

Jishuka had spent a few days at Grid's house. So she was friendly with Sehee, but unfamiliar with Yerim. Vantner didn't notice she was annoyed and said,

"Ruby's friend, isn't she pretty? She will be as sexy as you in 2~3 years."

Another guild member disagreed.

"Right now is good enough."

"Um... Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl are both very beautiful. I don't like Yura or Jishuka."

"I'm going to vote for Euphemina."

"Shut up, you lolicon."

The fired up Jishuka met the eyes of Sexy Schoolgirl. At that moment.

*Pisik.*

It was obvious ridicule. Sexy Schoolgirl was laughing at Jishuka.

‘I am better than the old one.’

She seemed to be saying.

“This girl with the perverted ID...!”

In the end, Jishuka exploded. She was about to run towards Yerim when Jude intervened.

“Ruby. Sexy Schoolgirl. Jude will protect them.”

“You idiot, won’t you go away?”

“Jude. He isn’t stupid. I heard that Grid is stupider.”

“That idiot is more than an idiot! You fool!”

“I’m not an idiot. Idiot.”

“The banquet is ready.”

The timing was good.

A situation was about to break out when a low ranking noble ran over and led the party to the banquet hall. There was no armed conflict, but the strange air between Jishuka and Yerim continued throughout the banquet.

“Oppa~ ahh~ please.” Yerim spoke in her natural coquettish manner.

“I will give this to you.” Jishuka acted awkwardly.

The two women sat with Grid between them and tried to force feed him. They shoved so many foods into his mouth that he had no room to enjoy the taste.

“Kekek.”

Marquis Steim laughed as he watched Grid choking.

“Ah! Heroes are always surrounded by beauties! Hahaha! It’s like looking at my younger days! Hahahahat!”

Marquis Steim had only one wife. But he wasn’t going to force his son-in-law to that. Lael clicked his tongue.

‘I feel sorry for Lady Irene.’

The situation was ridiculous. It was worse than the Korean morning dramas he watched while staying in South Korea for the National Competition. On the other hand, Sehee was filled with displeasure. She looked at her brother surrounded by women and cut her steak with a knife.

“An enemy!”

Jude sensed a strong killing intent and pulled out his sword, causing confusion. Thus, the atmosphere of the banquet gradually progressed in a strange direction.



Yubadakan Castle in Haken Kingdom.

“It’s lucky. His subordinates acquired titles, but he was the only one granted a territory. Aren’t they just nobles in name?”

Box, one of the Snake Guild’s 13 executives, said.

Then Zibal frowned. “Lucky? Lucky? You fool, the fact that they got the titles is what matters.”

The fact that they received a title meant they were eligible to be lords.

“In the future, Grid will expand his territory with no restrictions as a lord, then he will give it to one of his subordinates. Grid’s power will keep expanding. Imagine how great his authority will be with dozens of lords.”

“...It’s terrible.”

Box realized that the situation was more severe than he realized. Then Zibal made his decision.

“We need to put aside our differences. I must contact the leaders of the seven guilds.”

## CHAPTER 207

---

After the banquet ended. Grid and the Overgeared Guild returned to the north.

“What? All your stats have risen by 120?”

The Tzedakah Guild admired the effect of the Kingdom’s Hero title. In the case of rankers, they had at least seven different types of stats. Assuming that all stats +120 were applied to all seven, it was similar to gaining 84 levels.

“Wow, it’s almost a legendary title.”

“A hero of a kingdom would naturally be recorded in history, and they will eventually become a legend.”

“Aww... I wish we had joined the war a little sooner.”

“I’m envious. It’s amazing.”

The former Tzedakah Guild members regretted that they didn’t get the title because they arrived late to the battlefield. They never even imagined it. The fact that the legendary class Grid currently had 13 types of stats.

‘I want to boast about it.’

Grid was stiff. He wanted to brag to the about members about gaining ‘1,560 stat points!’

But.

‘I have to be careful.’

Grid was determined not to act childish in the future. It was the right judgment as the leader of the Overgeared Guild.

‘I don’t want to make the guild members feel bad.’

Grid learned how to care for others the more mature he became. He barely suppressed



his childish nature and changed the topic.

“Sehee, what happened to you?”

She had just started Satisfy, so he was curious about how she obtained the Saintess class.

“It is...”

Sehee was sulky for some reason, so Yerim explained on behalf of her. Grid listened to the story before laughing.

“It’s just like you.”

Sacrificing herself to save others without any benefit? It was difficult for Grid to understand Sehee. He was worried that someone would take advantage of her good nature. But he was proud of Sehee. His sister could be as kind as she wanted.

Grid was smiling warmly when Yerim asked him a question.

“By the way Oppa. I also got the hidden class called Saintess’ Knight? How do I change to it?”

“...Eh?”

Grid and the other guild members were shocked. Both Sehee and Yerim got a hidden class at level 1?

‘What is this good luck?’

‘If I stay with Grid, I might open the good luck stat in reality...’

‘It was good that I bought land next to Grid’s building... I should move to South Korea as soon as possible.’

Laue’s complexion rapidly brightened as the guild members gossiped.

‘Sexy Schoolgirl seemed useless, but that was a mistake. Great.’

Laeul came forward. “Let me explain. The conditions are different for each class

change but generally...”

With Lael’s help, Yerim was able to change to the Saintess’ Knight class.

“Is this good?”

A Saintess’ Knights had lower base abilities compared to other epic classes. The performance of the newly opened stats were moderate to low, and the power and function of the active skills were too plain.

However, the passive skills were admirable. If she was in a party with the Saintess, the performance of all skills rose by 20%, stats rose by 30% and her resistance increased by 50%. In addition, her defense increased by 40% of the Saintess’ defense. It seemed to be an upgraded version of Huroi’s second class, Apostle of Justice’s Partner.

“Both of you should stick together in the game.”

Satisfy would deepen the friendship between the two girls. Grid was very proud that Sehee had such a good best friend. It was because he recently became aware of how important the existence of friends was.

Before they knew it, the party reached the junction between Winston and Bairan.

Lael pointed out Jishuka. “Jishuka, you should say goodbye here. Please rule Bairan as you have been doing so far.”

Jishuka responded in a frustrated manner.

“Shouldn’t I be near Grid to help him? Can’t I leave Bairan to someone else and go with him to Reidan?”

“Do you think there are any guild members who can rule a city like Bairan as well as you?”

Jishuka was the only guild member who had proven their ability to manage a territory. They had to depend on Jishuka, who was an experienced person.

“The guild members will begin to rule over small villages and gain experience as a lord. Then your successor can be decided, so please endure until then.”

“...Yes.”

“Don’t forget to accumulate minerals in the guild’s warehouse while steadily doing the Guardian of the Forest raid.”

“I understand...”

Jishuka elected three guild members to help her and was about to leave with a bleak expression. Then Lauel offered something that interested her. “Do you want to swear a knight’s oath to Grid before leaving? Then Grid can summon you anytime he needs you.”

“I-Is that so?”

She could fly to Grid’s side no matter how far away she was. Jishuka was enthusiastic and pledged to Grid without any hesitation.

[You have become the knight of Duke Grid of the Eternal Kingdom.]

[Grid can summon you to his side at any time, assuming that you agree.]

“Hehe, then I’ll be going.”

Jishuka finally regained her energy and headed towards Bairan with the three guild members.

Lauel added something. “In addition, keep searching for talent in Bairan. Please gather three great knights each. In addition, don’t neglect the recruitment of soldiers.”

The knights and soldiers would become Grid’s power. Jishuka remembered this point and nodded while leaving. Then the rest of the guild members headed to Winston with Grid.



“Dear husband!” Irene met Grid’s group as they arrived in Winston. She didn’t care about other people’s eyes as she fell into Grid’s arms. “Thank you for being safe! Thank

you for helping my father! Thank you for protecting the kingdom! I'm so proud that you have become a duke!"

Irene's face was filled with love as she buried it into his chest without hesitation. Grid stroked her silver hair with a gentle expression before looking back.

Sehee and Yerim were staring at him.

'Why do they look so angry?'

Grid wondered as he introduced Irene to Sehee and Yerim.

"This is my wife."

"..."

Sehee and Yerim already knew that Grid was a married man in Satisfy. It was natural since his father-in-law was Marquis Steim. But they felt strange and uncomfortable when they directly saw the woman who was Grid's wife.

'Our parents are unaware that he is a married man... He's a completely bad person.'

'I want to win Youngwoo oppa first.'

Irene confirmed that the girls were looking at her with hostility and spoke with an uneasy expression. "Dear husband, have you obtained concubines as soon as you became a duke? My heart hurts..."

"It isn't like that. They are..."

There was no time for Grid to explain. Sehee and Yerim cried out.

"W-Who is Oppa's concubine?"

"I'm not Youngwoo oppa's concubine. I will be his legal wife!"

It was quite a big disturbance. Sehee was confused about what was happening, while Yerim blatantly spoke Irene.

"Well, this is a game world, not reality. So Oppa and I can get married. I don't want that,

but if Oppa asks me... Uh.”

“You are Youngwoo oppa’s wife with that body? Bah, did you use magic?”

“Oh my, oh my. What nonsense is this fox speaking?”

‘I’m tired.’

Grid sighed and suddenly checked the time. It was 7 p.m. in reality. It had been 6 hours in reality and 18 hours in Satisfy time since the kan jajang arrived. Grid separated the two girls from Irene and said.

“You guys should log out. Even if it’s Saturday, your parents will worry if you go home late.”

“Ah...!”

Many events had occurred since connecting to the game. There was the battle with the golem army, the banquet, the journey, etc. Due to that, the girls hadn’t been paying attention to the time.

“It’s already this time?”

The girls belatedly realized the situation and prepared to log out. But before they logged out.

“Today’s money, I’ll give it to Oppa.”

“Me too.”

Sehee and Yerim were only 18 years old this year. For them, 500,000 gold was a huge sum of money. Then what about 500 million won? It was an amount they couldn’t handle. It made them scared.

Grid understood their minds and received the 442,900 gold that Sehee received from the ‘Fight the Golems’ quest. However, he refused Yerim’s money.

“I’ll take care of Sehee’s money and return it when she is an adult. But Yerim, this is your money. If you want, then I’ll exchange it for cash and give it to your parents.”

Yerim stuck out her tongue. “Oppa, why are you acting like this? Please take my money. Then at a later time, make me an item with that money. I heard from the guild members that the items you make are expensive.”

Lauel prompted the hesitant Grid. “Take it. Please manage Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl’s capital for a while until they level up. Then make them items. It’s also good for the guild.”

Eventually, Grid nodded. Sehee and Yerim confirmed it and logged out. The mood finally stabilized.

“Irene, I will need to go away for a while.”

Irene looked sad.

“...Are you leaving for Reidan straight away?”

Tears filled her beautiful eyes. She didn’t want to be separated from him. Grid ached as he watched Irene, who was like a wet puppy in the rain, but it couldn’t be helped.

“Someday we will be able to travel together.”

“...”

Irene wanted to tell Grid not to leave. Or she wanted to follow him. But she had a role to play as the heir of a marquis, and Grid was in a difficult position because he just became a duke. Things might change in the future.

“Before you leave, let me feel your love for the last time.” Irene held Grid tightly. She didn’t care about the eyes of the soldiers, knights and guild members as she kissed Grid and declared. “I want to conceive a child with you today.”

“...”

Speaking such an explicit remark in public? The embarrassed Grid blushed while everyone else shifted their gaze as they coughed or whistled. But Irene’s eyes didn’t shake at all. She was serious. Grid was spellbound by her heart and beauty.

“I understand. I will do my best today.”

After that. The two people headed to the bedroom and shared a hot and precious time. Grid's large and thick fingers moved over Irene's silky skin...

The details will be omitted.

"Ahh, dear husband..."

Grid went deeper than ever...

Omitted.



"Then I will move."

As Grid and Irene were busy, Lauel headed towards the dungeon. Shay's party was contained there. Lauel made a suggestion to the people who had already been trapped in prison for three days.

"Give me the most expensive item you have. Then I'll guarantee your freedom and safety."

Shay snorted. "We will be released after three hours, so why should we?"

Huroi's situation in the past was a special case. Normally, no matter how big the crime, a user couldn't be locked up in prison for more than three days. Shay's group knew this better than anyone, so they laughed at Lauel's suggestion.

Lauel looked at them coldly. "I will make it easier for you to understand. I will kill you if you don't pass me an item. If you have eyes and ears, you should already know that I have that power."

"What...?"

PK users like Shay's party had a high probability of dropping items when they died. Lauel looked at their frightened expression and pulled out a list. It was the list that Irene gave him.

"This is a list of items that you currently own. Give me your most expensive and precious item. Then I will spare your lives."

“T-This...!”

Shay’s party thought it was ridiculous. This young man called Lauel, he was as evil as them, who had threatened so many people? Once again, Shay’s party vowed not to mess with Grid.

On the other hand, Grid spent precious time with Irene before calling for Euphemina.

“Do you remember Rabbit?”



## CHAPTER 208

---

“Do you remember Rabbit?”

“It’s a dear name.”

Euphemina met Grid due to Rabbit’s quest. Rabbit asked Euphemina to participate in the item making game against Grid, then he asked her to rescue Grid from prison. He had a smarter, more flexible mindset than most humans, so she couldn’t forget him.

“I remember. He was the brains of the Mero Company.”

“You remembered pretty quickly. What do you think about inviting him to the guild?”

“...”

Did Grid really share his affection with Irene? He was soaked with sweat. His upper body was somewhat revealed by the robe he loosely wore, revealing a masculine appearance. It was appropriate to call him sexy.

It was the effect of the charm stat. Grid’s charm had sharply rising after becoming the first duke, so most people would feel favorable towards him. It was the reason why Euphemina was enchanted. But Grid wasn’t yet aware of this fact.

“Euphemina?”

Euphemina regained her spirit and asked, “Ah, what did you say just now?”

Grid repeated. “What do you think about inviting Rabbit to the guild?”

Euphemina’s opinion was positive.

“I want to invite him. Wasn’t he the one who drove the Mero Company to the top in the north? If you take into consideration his outstanding brain and experiences, his talent as a merchant and his ability to discern your value, he must be a named-grade NPC.”

Their encounter with Rabbit was short, but intense. It was a common feeling for both Grid and Euphemina.

“He is probably a named NPC... I agree.”

The current Grid was sure that Rabbit was an NPC with a much higher rating than Jude or Minor. He would be a great help if he was invited. But there was one problem. Rabbit was the hero who helped Grid and Euphemina save the people of Winston, but it couldn't be denied that he was the number two of the Mero Company. Thanks to that, Marquis Steim sentenced him to 10 years in prison.

“Isn't Rabbit still trapped in Frontier's prison? Can you invite a prisoner to the guild? I can't figure out how to get him out of prison.”

“Why can't I get him out?”

Grid opened his inventory. Then he pulled out an item he got along with Reidan.

[Great Lord's Sword]

Durability: 220/220 Attack Power: 220

\* Dignity +150

\* Insight +150

\* Leadership +150

\* Skill 'Character Observation' will be generated.

\* Skill 'Talent Search' will be generated.

A rare sword only given to the best lords.

You can observe the soldiers and residents more closely and efficiently command them.

Weight: 200

It was an upgraded version of the Ruler's Sword.

Grid handed it to Euphemina.

“I am a duke. With my authority, I can pardon a sinner sentenced by a marquis. Probably.”

“...Probably.” Grid shrugged at Euphemina’s questioning gaze. “Will he refuse the request of his son-in-law who’s a duke? He became a marquis thanks to me, so he should listen to this small request. Isn’t that right?”

“Ah, that’s right. I understand. I will go to Frontier and invite Rabbit to the guild. But I don’t need this sword.”

“We don’t know. Don’t you want to examine Rabbit with the sword first in order to determine if he is worth it?”

“The Character Observation skill was created on its own once my insight reached 1,600. So I don’t need that item’s help.”

“1,600...?”

Grid currently only had 1,100 insight, even if the effect of Kingdom’s Hero was applied. However, Euphemina was a Duplicator and her main stat was insight, so it exceeded 1,600 points.

‘I’m envious.’

Character Observation was a skill to check the NPC’s stat information, skills information and potential. It would be much more comfortable if he could use this useful skill without relying on an item.

Euphemina asked Grid. “Should I come back to Winston with Rabbit?”

Grid shook his head. “No, go to Reidan. We will be departing for Reidan soon.”

“I understand.”

Euphemina said goodbye and left the office. Grid was left alone and he started thinking as he looked at the Great Lord’s Sword.

‘Is there a hidden talent in Winston?’ Grid wanted to take care of everything before leaving Winston. ‘I should explore with Talent Search.’

Grid was about to head into the city with the Great Lord's Sword when he suddenly stopped.

"That reminds me of Kesan Canyon..."

It happened when Grid entered Kesan Canyon to acquire Pagma's Swordsmanship. The NPC who called himself the captain of the Saharan Empire's knights had tried to give him a quest.

'Was his name Piero? He was incredibly strong.'

He had never seen such a strong NPC since Doran. Who was stronger between him and Jude? Jude wasn't a match, even armed with the +8 Dainsleif.

'I have to invite him.'

Grid worried for a while before quickly making a decision.

"I will attempt it once."

He had nothing to lose if the invitation failed. This was because the NPC had a quest related to the Saharan Empire.

"Reidan is near the border of Saharan, so that's a plus."

Grid determined his goal and gathered the guild members.

"Take Khan and head to Reidan first. Join forces and organize the place until I arrive. Oh, don't forget to take Minor along as well. I'm worried that he'll escape if he isn't under someone's eyes."

Vantner was puzzled.

"You aren't coming with us?"

"I have a place I need to stop by first."

Lauel had just taken the items away from Shay's party and he admonished Grid. "You're the leader of the guild. When you are doing your personal activities, you are obliged to explain the situation to the guild members in more detail. So that we don't

worry.”

Grid briefly explained. “I am going to pick up a treasure before heading to Reidan.”

Treasure? The guild members were expectant after seeing Grid’s attitude. Then they left for Reindan. Reidan was located to the west of the kingdom, so it would be a long journey.

“Then I’m going.”

Grid separated from the guild, had a gratifying farewell with Irene, and ended up alone. He opened Braham’s Message as he flew towards Kesan Canyon.

[Are you sure you want to open Braham’s Message?]

[There is unidentified magic power. You need to be careful.]

Grid flinched. He recalled the time when he opened Braham’s treasure box in the Golem’s Labyrinth. He only opened the message after he fully armed himself with items and the pavranium.

[The unidentified magic power has formed someone’s voice.]

Braham’s voice was directly transmitted to his brain.

[Pagma’s Descendant, the fact that you received this message means that you’ve defeated my golem army? This is a simple warning. Gain the four blessings of the gods and make the Vessel of the Soul! Then resurrect my body! If you keep delaying, then you will suffer a disaster!]

“He invaded the kingdom just to intimidate me?”

This crazy bastard. He killed thousands of people just for that reason?

‘He is beyond selfish.’

Grid called up the information of the quest he had been postponing.

### [Great Magician's Resurrection]

Rating: Second Class Quest.

The legendary great magician Braham was a genius. He reigned as the best magician ever since he started learning magic. There was a myth that he survived against the fire dragon Trauka without dying.

As he grew old, he started mourning the fact that he was a mortal. Mentally and physically, he had already transcended humanity. Therefore, he wanted to become immortal.

After much research, he designed the 'Vessel of the Soul' that will regenerate his mortal soul into an immortal soul.

But the Vessel of the Soul is an object that doesn't exist in this world and is impossible to create.

He searched for an entirely new mineral that could be used as a material for the Vessel of the Soul and learned that his old friend Pagma was trying to create a mineral that wasn't part of this world. He went to Pagma and assisted in the work.

The two combined their power and created the mineral called pavranium.

Braham had no doubts that pavranium could be used to make the Vessel of the Soul.

But the only blacksmith who could smelt pavranium was Pagma, who unfortunately died of old age.

In the end, Braham didn't achieve his wish!

He looked forward to the day that Pagma's Descendant would be born to create the Vessel of the Soul, creating 28 mines and setting up mazes all over the place before he died.

Each labyrinth is full of minerals, and he believed that it would be enough to lure Pagma's Descendant.

Now 300 years have passed.

Out of 28 pieces of Braham's soul that were sealed in 28 labyrinths, one has finally encountered you.

Braham wants you to make the Vessel of the Soul. Through the Vessel of the Soul, he will be resurrected with the soul and body of an immortal.

\* Second Class Quest Clear Condition: Create the Vessel of the Soul.

Second Class Quest Clear Reward: A large amount of pavranium.

In order to create the Vessel of the Soul, the pavranium needed to obtain four blessings. But Grid had a hostile relationship with the Yatan Church, so it was close to impossible to receive their blessing.

'No matter how much Braham threatens, it's currently an impossible quest. There's something strange.'

Legend had it that Pagma died 100 years ago. But when reading the details of this quest, Braham's time of death was 300 years ago. From this perspective, Braham's story about the pavranium seemed to be full of mistakes. The past Grid wasn't cautious and didn't recognize this mistake, but now he was different.

'There's something fishy about Braham.'

In fact, he could obtain the quest rewards with just Minor. Hadn't Grid already found seven pieces of pavranium in the north thanks to Minor?

"Great Magician's Resurrection? Damn, I can't complete this quest. If you want to warn me, then warn me. I don't like this attitude. Damn bastard."

Obviously, he had an obligation to complete the class quest. He had to clear the class quest in order to fully understand the story about Pagma and to complete his class. But Grid wasn't nervous. If all of the pavranium was recovered, it was assumed that the story would develop without Braham's help. It was a wisdom he naturally acquired while clearing various types of difficult quests.

[Braham's Message has been destroyed.]

Grid removed the ridiculous message and his flight speed increased. Then after two hours, he arrived at Kesan Canyon.

“It was around this place?”

Loran Falls was one of the most sacred places for the people of the Eternal Kingdom.

Grid shouted, “Come out! Piero!”

His powerful voice echoed through the canyon. After a while.

“My name is Piaro, not Piero.”

The middle-aged man showed up in front of Grid. Grid was completely different from the past, so Piaro didn’t recognize him.

“Who are you? Were you sent by Asmophel?” In the past, Piaro thought highly of Grid’s development. However, the current Piaro recognized Grid as strong and was very alert. “Based on your skills... It seems like you can handle the current Asmophel?”

An endless sense of dignity could be seen. This was the current Grid. Piaro was extremely nervous while Grid cut to the chase.

“You, won’t you become my knight?”

Grid observed Piaro’s details using the Great Lord’s Sword and was more stimulated than when he made a legendary item.



## CHAPTER 209

---

Name: Piaro

Age: 39 Gender: Male

Class: Swordsman/ Hermit

Title: Great Swordsman

\* The closest person to becoming a sword saint in this age.

\* When a blade type weapon is equipped, attack power will increase by 40% and attack speed by 10%. This effect is applied separately from the Sword Mastery skill effect.

Level: 367

Strength: 2,038 Stamina: 1,380

Agility: 1,910 Intelligence: 530

Leadership: 812 Indomitable: 824

Skills: Trap Installation (C+), Empire's Swordsmanship (B), Overwhelming (A), Empire's Military Tactics (A+), Great Swordsman's Enlightenment (S+), Supreme Swordsmanship (SS), Fated to Perish (??).

A descendant of a prestigious bloodline in the Saharan Empire, he was born with a natural talent for swordsmanship and military tactics. He joined the knights at a young age and became a captain in only 12 years.

In the following 5 years, he succeeded in winning a lot of achievements. However, 2 years ago, he witnessed the liaison between Asmophel and Empress Marie.

He was wrongfully branded as an imperial traitor and forced to flee.

\* Currently, this person is suffering from a severe sickness of the heart. He has lost his original nature and all stats are reduced by 20% from those shown in the status window.

### [Trap Installation]

Piario can install simple traps. It's a skill acquired to beat his pursuers.

### [Empire's Swordsmanship]

The basic swordsmanship passed down to the knights of the Saharan Empire. It is made of five forms and is easy to learn, but the power is relatively good.

Piario has reconstructed this swordsmanship and raised it to a higher level.

### [Overwhelming]

Piario can overwhelm a target that has a much lower level than you. The overwhelmed target will feel fear.

### [Empire's Military Tactics]

High level military tactics that the Saharan commanders learn. Piario personally studied these tactics and raised it to another level.

He can seamlessly command thousands of troops.

### [Great Swordsman's Enlightenment]

Pairo developed aura after achieving enlightenment as a swordsman. Be cautious, since the forming the aura will take some time.

Now that he has become one with the sword, his aura has become intangible and more powerful.

His sword techniques have gone beyond the limits of a human.

### [Supreme Swordsmanship]

The swordsmanship that was passed through Piario's family for generations. Piario was able to become a great swordsman by mastering this swordsmanship that

hasn't been mastered by anyone in his family for hundreds of years.

There is a theory that this swordsmanship originated on the Eastern Continent.

[Fated to Perish]

Piario's unique technique. The sword will attack one point on the target. The target hit by the sword must die.

Piario is deserving to be a legend just from this technique alone.

Skill Mana Consumption: 40% of the maximum mana.

Skill Cooldown Time: 1 hour.

\* This skill can't be applied in quests and raids.

'It is beyond my expectations.'

Piario's passive skill was comparable to Pagma's Swordsmanship (Lv. 2), which increased physical attack by 30%, critical hit rate by 20%, and critical damage by 10%. Moreover, his active skills were brilliant.

'In particular, the Fated to Perish skill is terrifying. A skill that will 100% kill a person?'

It was a technique that made him eligible to become a legend. It was safe to call this a legendary rated skill. But Grid admired something else about Piario.

'There is no limit on his stats increase.'

So far, all NPCs that Grid observed had a limit on their stats. It was the same with higher rated NPCs like Jude and Minor. Piario's name might be marked with gold, but there were no limits on his stats, so he could grow infinitely like a user.

'Yes, this is truly a named-grade NPC.'

Grid was thrilled. "You, won't you become my knight?"

"What?" Piario frowned. "There are several things to point out. First of all, who are

you?”

Grid introduced himself in a confident manner.

“I’m Grid, Pagma’s Descendant and a duke of the Eternal Kingdom.”

The Saharan Empire was the peak nation on the continent, so they dismissed the Eternal Kingdom. In fact, the Eternal Kingdom offered a tribute to the empire, just like other kingdoms. Piaro was a noble of the Saharan Empire, so the duke of a small kingdom didn’t seem great at all.

Just, “Pagma’s Descendant?”

Piaro couldn’t stand still. Blacksmith Pagma, he had earned the reputation as the best swordsman since Sword Saint Muller. It was natural that Piaro was interested in a legend’s descendant.

“Is this the truth?”

Piaro quickly showed a combat posture. It was his instincts as a swordsman.

Grid smiled awkwardly. “Why do you suddenly look like that? Do you want to fight? I don’t want to do that.”

Piaro pointed his sword at Grid. “You are the one who rambled first. Suddenly asking me to become your knight? I should first check to see if you are qualified.”

Piaro could accurately guess the level of Pagma’s Descendant. Then he could gauge his gap with Sword Saint Muller. Piaro decided and rushed towards Grid. Grid thought it was ridiculous as the distance between them was narrowed in an instant.

‘Is he seriously brandishing a sword at me? Is he crazy about fighting?’

Grid had wanted to avoid the fight. His weak self in the past would’ve run away, but now he was strong. He pulled out the +9 Failure.

*Jeeeong!*

Piaro admired the blue shark-shaped greatsword.

“That’s a great sword.”

Grid identified Piaro’s sword and scoffed.

“Your sword is unimpressive. Well, if it’s repaired, then it will improve.”

“Weapons aren’t important.”

*Kkirik!*

Piaro rotated the sword in his hand that had collided with Failure. Then Grid felt a tremendous pressure and almost let go of Failure. He had to tighten his grip in order to not lose it.

‘I have more strength, but why am I being pushed in a power struggle? Is this technique?’

At this time, all of Grid’s strength was concentrated on his upper body. Piaro kicked Grid’s ankle.

“Eh?”

Grid stumbled. Piaro’s foot aimed at his face while he was leaning sideways.

“Kuk!”

Grid raised his knee to defend against the kick. This time, his strength was concentrated on his lower body.

*Chukak.*

Piaro rotated his sword again and struck Failure. Blood spurted from Grid’s chest. Piaro expressed his thoughts. “Poor techniques. Your claim about being Pagma’s Descendant is false. Or was Pagma’s skill this low in the first place?”

“Poor techniques? It doesn’t matter if you disrespect Pagma, but don’t humiliate me!”

“...”

Grid became serious. His pride was dented so he triggered Pagma’s Swordsmanship,

Link. 21 blue-white blades were generated and covered Piaro at a fearsome speed.

However.

*Chaeeeeeng!*

Piaro defended against all 21 strikes by moving his sword with minimal movements. His stats might've fallen by 20%, but this was possible because his agility was twice as high as Grid's. In the meantime, Grid had only been investing his points in strength and stamina. But now he gained enlightenment.

'Speed is really important in swordsmanship. I need to invest in agility in the future.'

"Is this your best technique?"

Piaro was disappointed and looked at Grid with derision.

"No way!"

Grid used a combo skill that he developed over his many combat experiences. Theoretically, it was a combo guaranteed to win.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship, Restraint!"

Grid first restrained Piaro's actions. Rather than linking with Kill which might kill Piaro, he struck three times. Then once Restraint was almost over, he used Wave to slow down Piaro's movements and used Link again.

Piaro's high agility and passive skill meant he defended against most of the attacks, but he eventually allowed two attacks and coughed out blood.

Then he dropped his sword.

"What? Is this the end?" Grid was immersed in the duel, so he couldn't help asking Piaro with a frown.

"Doesn't it seem like you're holding back? I admit defeat."

In fact, Piaro also hadn't used all his strength. He didn't use Fated to Perish. But even if he used it, Grid had his invincible passive skill. Grid didn't doubt his victory, so his

expression brightened.

“Okay. Now that I’ve won, will you become my knight?”

Piario shook his head. “I just said I would see if you are qualified. I never promised to become your knight. I’m sorry, but I promised to never swear allegiance to anyone again. I can’t accept your request.”

“Are you traumatized because of your experience of being abandoned by your master?”

“What...?”

Grid spoke honestly to the baffled Piario. “I’m well aware of your situation. Weren’t you framed by a colleague and became a fugitive? The fact that the emperor didn’t help you meant that he also doubted your loyalty... Now you’re determined to completely isolate yourself from the world after being betrayed by your colleagues?”

Piario showed killing intent for the first time.

“The empire is the only one who should know that story. It isn’t something that can be discovered through rumors. Did Asmophel tell you?”

“No? I heard this story directly from you.”

What was this nonsense? Piario still looked puzzled, so Grid pointed to his face.

“Look closely. Aren’t I somehow familiar?”

“Come to think of it...?” Piario finally remembered. “Are you the person from that time?”

A year and a half ago. There was one person who entered Kesan Canyon, a place where powerful monsters were found, by himself. At the time, he was weak, but he seemed like he would grow quickly. So Piario asked him to act on Piario’s behalf.

“Amazing. Your skills, atmosphere and appearance have changed. I didn’t think you would be the ugly person from that time.”

“No matter how ugly I was, saying that...”

Grid was shocked and frustrated by Piaro's blunt words.

After a short silence.

Grid barely managed to regain his mind and proposed.

"I will get revenge for you. Instead, come with me. Isn't it too unfair for you to live away from the world just because of a traitor?"

Piario questioned him. "I don't know why you need me. Isn't the Eternal Kingdom guaranteed peace as a neutral kingdom? Why do you need my help?"

"I want you to escort me when I go to find minerals..."

"What nonsense..."

In fact, Grid's intentions didn't matter.

'If I can achieve my revenge...'

Piario lost everything due to Asmophel. His colleagues loyal to him were killed. Revenge was Piario's last desire.

'If I can achieve my revenge, I'm even willing to sell my soul to the devil.'

But the problem was after his revenge was achieved. Was he willing to pledge the rest of his life to someone?

As Piario hesitated, Grid stabbed right to his core.

"You wanted a duel as soon as you heard that I am Pagma's Descendant, so aren't you still longing for strength? Don't you want to become a sword saint? Among my companions, there are many strong people. Don't you want to live and train with them?"

"...But I doubt that I can be loyal to you."

"You don't have to force yourself to be loyal. You don't have to pledge to be a knight if you're unwilling. Stay as my guest. You can decide for yourself if you want to follow me."



Grid didn't want to miss Piaro, so he eventually took a step back. Therefore, Piaro had no choice but to accept Grid's proposal.

On that day, Grid left the city where he lived for a year and eight months after he became Pagma's Descendant. It was the moment when the legend shifted to a new stage.

## CHAPTER 210

---

Most of the magic formulas used by magicians today were established by Braham. Thanks to Braham, the science of magic was able to develop and the authority of magicians rose. For magicians, Braham was a teacher and object of respect.

But what was the truth? Braham's achievements that people knew about actually belonged to Mumud. The person who simplified complicated magic formulas, made it easier for training, and spread it into the world was Mumud, not Braham.

Then why was Mumud unknown, and Braham praised by the world? Braham was the only one who knew.

The Golem's Labyrinths.

[You ignored my warning. Pagma's Descendant, you are the first person to make me so angry after Mumud.]

Braham was furious at Grid, who didn't respond to his message. His 28 souls twisted like they were flames in front of the wind.

[I will make you regret it.]

In the past, Mumud was Braham's best disciple. Mumud's talents grew day by day and would eventually transcend him. Braham couldn't tolerate it. He couldn't let his top position be taken by his disciple, so he monitored Mumud's every move.

That's how the 'Eyes of Surveillance' magic was attached to Mumud's Orb.

[I will find out your weakness.]

Grid had reproduced Mumud's Orb for Euphemina, allowing him to be watched. The day would come when Grid would eventually move according to Braham's will.



Deep in the forest.

“You’re finally here.”

A man with matted hair was waiting when Grid logged in. It was Great Swordsman Piaro. He was seated in front of a campfire and Grid greeted him.

“Good morning. Have you eaten?”

Grid’s attitude towards Piaro was very friendly. It was much more favorable than when he dealt with beautiful people like Yura and Jishuka. But Piaro was unfriendly.

“I ate. Let’s go.”

“Yes.”

Grid’s smile didn’t go away. He was happy at the thought of having the strongest swordsman as his colleague.

‘If Piaro becomes a sword saint...’

He would have unsurpassed power. He didn’t need to be afraid of demons like Hell Gao anymore. Maybe he could try raiding a dragon.

‘It is enough for now.’

Strength, stamina, agility. If these three combat related stats were combined, Piaro had higher stats than Grid. Piaro also had the strongest skills as well. It was very reassuring to Grid. But there was one drawback.

‘His appearance is deplorable.’

It might be due to his sickness of the heart. Piaro looked so old that it was hard to believe he was 29 years old. It was more believable if he was 50 years old.

‘It’s a matter of style.’

His shabby attire and shaggy hair made him look like a homeless person. He had a

scruffy beard and he stank.

‘Appearance is important.’

Grid once had the worst appearance, so he knew the importance of appearance better than anyone else. Wasn’t he despised by other people just because he was ugly or because of his clothes? Grid determined that it wasn’t good to leave Piaro as he was and pulled clothes out of his inventory. It was noble clothing that he received from Irene. Grid was hesitant because it was an item worth 50 gold, but he closed his eyes and handed it to Piaro.

“Put this on. And why don’t you cut or tie your hair up?”

Piaro refused. “I don’t care about my appearance.”

“I’m embarrassed to go around with you.”

It was something his sister often said to him. Grid felt a flash of understanding.

‘This is how Sehee felt.’

Grid smiled bitterly as Piaro responded bluntly.

“You have to endure it if you want me to come with you.”

“Ah...”

Piaro’s nerves were sharp. Anger was the only thing that could be seen in both eyes. It was because he was obsessed with revenge. As stated in the status window, Piaro was currently suffering from a sickness of the heart and lost his original nature.

Grid felt the need to take care of him. Rather than forcing or persuading him, Grid would let him do as he wanted. It was the best and smartest choice for Grid, who had little experience with building up relationships with people.

*Grrr.*

A pair of twin ogres appeared in front of the two people who had been walking for half a day. They were powerful level 260 monsters, but they were nothing more than puppies in front of the legendary Grid and Great Swordsman Piaro.

*Seokeok!*

It only took Piaro a matter of seconds.

*Peeeeek!*

Grid took around one minute to destroy his twin ogre.

Piaro asked him.

“I felt it when we fought the other day, but your basics are terrible. You can implement Pagma’s wonderful techniques, but you haven’t mastered the sword.”

Grid had been using a greatsword as a weapon since Satisfy began. He might not be the best, but he was confident that he knew the basics. However, considering his experience and level, it was true that he lacked skill.

Grid became aware of it because of Piaro and gave an excuse. “I don’t care about swordsmanship. Anyway, I am armed with excellent weapons and armor. If I rely on my equipment, I can overpower my opponent.”

“That is wrong for warriors. Moreover, it’s bad to just rely on equipment if your equipment isn’t suitable.” Piaro pointed to Braham’s Boots. “If you really want to rely on equipment, you should change those shoes first.”

“Why?”

The defense of Braham’s Boots were outstanding considering they had a level 240 limit. Moreover, it was light and comfortable to wear, speeding up movement speed. It was nothing compared to Failure or the Holy Light set, but it was a worthy item because Fly was attached to it.

Grid sent him a glance stating ‘you don’t know anything,’ so Piaro explained.

“The greatsword emphasizes power over swiftness. In order to put as much weight as possible behind your strikes, you should wear sturdy shoes that can withstand the weight.

‘What is this?’

Grid wasn't smart. If he heard an explanation when he wasn't prepared in advance, he was slow to understand. Piaro gave him a more direct explanation.

"If you wear heavy boots, it is easier to concentrate your weight and you can gain more power behind your strikes. So I recommend heavy boots."

'So... Wearing heavy boots will increase the attack power of the greatsword?' Grid was delighted after successfully interpreting it. 'I found a hidden system!'

Grid was thrilled about finding a hidden system that most people didn't know about. Named NPCs could give all sorts of specific advice. His liking towards Piaro increased.

'I will be able to get ahead of others.'

Grid didn't know.

If a heavy weapon user was armed with heavy boots, the system would give additional attack power. This was already common sense to most users. It showed that Grid was still ignorant when it came to overall game knowledge.



"Is this Patrian?"

"Yes."

After a three day journey, Grid and Piaro arrived at Patrian. The fortified city, Patrian. It was a strategic point at the border of the Gauss Kingdom, while also establishing the boundary that separated the western and northern parts of the Eternal Kingdom.

In addition, it was Grid's starting city.

'I lived here for nearly a year...'

Grid not only hunted countless orcs and goblins around Patrian, he also cleared all types of quests. Thanks to that, he was able to maximize his affinity with all the residents of Patrian, and received Earl Ashur's quest, where he eventually became Pagma's Descendant.

"That bastard Ashur..."

Grid gritted his teeth as he once again recalled Earl Ashur. He was forced to become Pagma's Descendant due to Earl Ashur, and he trembled as he recalled his days as a minus level.

'... I vowed that I would get revenge once I became stronger.'

Grid had been filled with fury towards Earl Ashur for a while. But that was the past. Due to his relationship with Earl Ashur, he ended up benefiting.

"We will stay here today and leave tomorrow."

At this speed, they could arrive in Reidan in four days. The relaxed Grid entered Patrian with Piaro. At that moment, Earl Ashur's magic detected Grid's presence. He checked Grid's identity through the magic spheres he installed throughout Patrian and rose to his feet.

"He isn't afraid of this place...!"

Earl Ashur had dreamt about getting revenge on Grid, after losing Pagma's Rare Book in front of his eyes. He immediately summoned his knights.

"We're going hunting."

It was a great opportunity to repay the grudge. Earl Ashur was overcome with joy, despite being aware of Grid's importance. He knew that Grid had become a duke, but he didn't care.



"This meal tastes terrible."

Patrian was a fortified city, not a tourist one. Therefore, it didn't have a system designed to care for outsiders. The accommodations they found didn't have proper facilities. Piaro looked at Grid, who was complaining about the cheap inn's poor meal, and asked.

"Why are you hiding your identity?"

Grid said he was a duke of the kingdom. If this was true, he should be treated with great hospitality by the owner of the city. Yet Grid hid his identity with a hat before

entering the city. It was like he was a wanted person, rather than a duke.

Grid explained to the suspicious Piaro. “We are only staying overnight, and I don’t want to be bothered.”

“Hrmm...”

Well, Grid’s actions didn’t matter. Piaro only cared about his revenge. Piaro thought so and tilted his glass. It was cheap alcohol, but this was the first time he could drink in two years. On the other hand, the users were looking at Grid and Piaro with strange expressions.

“It’s a strange combination.”

“Why are those two together?”

Grid was dressed in his beginners clothing to conceal his identity, while Piaro seemed like a beggar. People recognized Grid as a beginner, and Piaro as a beggar NPC. They were puzzled about why an NPC would be with a beginner.

“No matter how cheap the food here is, it would be somewhat burdensome for a beginner to afford... How can he buy drinks as well?”

“The smell is too much.”

“Really annoying. What is that?”

The female users found the odor coming from Piaro annoying. The male users saw the female users’ reactions and came forward.

“Hey, Beggar. I don’t know why a poor person is trying to get drunk, but can you stop disturbing the other guests with your rancid smell?”

“The ladies have lost their appetite because of you. Get lost.”

In the first place, users didn’t care about NPCs. It was natural for the treatment to be worse when the NPC was a beggar. Piaro ignored them. Grid didn’t care. The two men weren’t worth dealing with, so he just enjoyed his food and drink.

“The steamed lizardmen tails are good to eat. They’re similar to pig trotters.”



“What are pig trotters? I’ve tasted all types of delicacies in the empire, but I’ve never heard of such a dish.

“It is delicious pig’s feet.”

“Hah~ the beggar is ignoring us.”

The level 109 Coke became angry at being ignored by the beggar and eventually committed a mistake. His hand moved like he was about to do something. Piaro didn’t allow it. He spat out the bone of the lizardman tail that he was eating.

“Eek.”

[You have suffered 3,190 damage.]

Coke’s eyes widened as he screamed. It was because he was hit in the forehead by a bone and lost more than a third of his health.

## CHAPTER 211

---

Coke was confused.

‘What is this?’

He lost more than a third of his health when hit by a bone thrown by a beggar?

‘A bug?’

It was a reasonable guess. A bug made more sense than a high level user like him being so damaged by a bone.

Who was he?

Less than half a year after starting Satisfy, he reached level 109 and was one of the best known players in Patrian. He also had a chance to hunt one of the most notorious monsters near Patrian, the orc captain, alone.

‘I will be a god in the future, so I can’t be hurt by a bone...!’

Coke’s goal was Grid. It was his desire to be called God Coke on the world stage, just like Grid. He had such a lofty goal that today’s experience was even more humiliating.

“You hit me so, I’ll hit you back!”

Coke rolled up his sleeves. Then he swung his hand at Piaro’s head.

“Keok.”

[You have suffered 3,140 damage.]

This time, it was a bean. It wasn’t even a big kidney bean, but a small pea. He was shocked as a pea flew out and hit him.

‘Unbelievable! It wasn’t a bug?’

*Jeurereuk.*

Blood poured from Coke's mouth as he finally figured out the situation. He was able to realize that Piaro wasn't a beggar, but a tremendously high level NPC.

'I didn't understand the subject!'

Satisfy was famous for never having a bug since it opened. It was rumored that the creator, Lim Cheolho, was a god. Coke belatedly tried to change his attitude. He attempted to avoid a situation by apologizing to Piaro. But it was still a crisis because the other users didn't understand the atmosphere.

"That guy is throwing food! Coke! Smash him!"

"Teach that beginner and NPC a lesson!"

The users didn't know that Coke was already half dead!

"Coke! Coke! Coke!"

"Get rid of that beggar!"

Coke was upset because of their cheers and fighting atmosphere.

'Please figure out the atmosphere!'

He didn't want to be killed by bones and peas in front of Patrian's users, who looked up to him. Coke nervously looked at Piaro, but Piaro had no interest in him. He dismissed Coke at the level of a flying insect.

Grid felt admiration.

"What did you just do? It looks like you dealt big damage with the bone and pea?"

The user with the ID of Coke, based on the items he wore, he had a minimum level of 100. In addition, his armor had at least a rare rating. It was amazing that Coke coughed up blood after being hit by a bean.

Piaro explained to Grid. "I used qi. I can maximize my power by injecting qi into an object. In my hands, even a feather can become a sharp sword."

“It is like a wuxia master.”

“Wuxia? What is that?”

“Strong people like you who transform the world.”

Grid and Piaro didn’t care about the other people making a fuss. The users became increasingly furious.

“That beggar is ignoring us until the end...!”

Coke didn’t take action, so the level 78th monk called Pitu and the level 85 berserker Dais rose from their seats. As they were approaching Piaro, the door of the inn suddenly opened.

“Sir Dio is coming!”

Dozens of soldiers rushed into the narrow inn. They stood and saluted as a white armored knight entered. The young man had particularly noticeable blonde eyelashes. He looked around the inn with narrowed eyes.

“It stinks. Are people eating worse than pigs? It’s incredibly stinky.” Dio held a blue rose in one hand and raised it to his nose. He smelled it and asked. “Has anyone here seen Duke Grid?”

“Duke Grid?”

“Is he talking about God Grid?”

There were no high level monsters near Patrian. It was because the knights and soldiers of Patrian used the monsters to train.

“Why would they be looking for a high level user in Patrian?”

“No. Why would God Grid come to this type of place?”

“You really don’t know.” In the end, Dio started to examine the users’ faces for Grid. “You’re not it. You also aren’t it. You as well. Um...?”

Dio’s gaze went to a corner. There was a beginner adventurer sitting next to a beggar.

“Take your hat off. Heok?”

Dio approached Grid and commanded, only to become terrified. It was because of an enormous stench that spread.

“Dirty guy...!”

Dio was a noble and a knight, so he had an unusually obsessive temperament about being clean. He became furious at Piaro, who hadn’t taken a bath for at least a month.

“How dare you go around in such a disgusting manner! What a shameless bastard! My nose will become paralyzed because of you! Don’t make me nauseous and go away!”

“Ohh!”

The users annoyed by Piaro thought this was a cool remark.

“Let’s go.”

Grid rose from his seat. He judged that it would be better to leave because Earl Ashur seemed to have noticed him.

‘I don’t want to delay the time.’

The big city Reidan. He had tremendous expectations about his city. He wanted to arrive quickly and check how much taxes he would get. Dio caught up with Grid who was trying to leave.

“Didn’t I tell you to take off your hat?”

“...The boat might’ve already sailed.” Grid grinned at Dio and asked. “Do you really think that I am Duke Grid?”

Dio bluntly replied.

“That’s right. I received a tip that Duke Grid was here.”

Grid’s face distorted. “Then why are you speaking like that?”

“Uh...?”

An enormous pressure was released. Dio, the soldiers and the users in the inn were overwhelmed by the pressure and hesitated. It was because Grid's dignity stat was comparable to the king of a nation. He threw off his hat.

"G-Grid...!"

"God Grid!"

Dio was astonished, while the other users cried out. Grid pressed his finger to Dio's forehead. "If you knew I was Duke Grid, why did you speak without using honorifics? Eh? What did you originally say? Did you call me a bastard? Eh? Are we friends?"

Grid had bad feelings towards Earl Ashur's knights as well. The one who killed Grid when he acquired Pagma's Rare Book wasn't Earl Ashur, but Earl Ashur's knights. And Dio was one of them.

"I tried to endure it, but this bastard is too arrogant."

Grid couldn't suppress his rage and slapped Dio. It was a terrible experience for Dio, who had never even been scolded by his parents.

"Y-You hit me...!"

He bit his lips as Grid hit Dio's cheeks again.

"You didn't even apologize for not bowing! This rude bastard!"

Grid had matured after several incidents, but the roots of a human didn't easily change. Grid's natural tendencies weren't good. Grid slapped Dio in front of all these people, without considering Dio's position at all.

*Slap! Slap! Slap!*

Dio's handsome face quickly swelled up like a toad. In the end, Dio's string of reason snapped. He grabbed his sword, forgetting Earl Ashur's order to 'graciously' bring Grid to him.

"Such humiliation...!"

"What? Do you dare to show disrespect to a duke? You want to be like this until the

end?" Grid's eyes shone. It was the same as when he was called the Psychopath Butcher. "You are sentenced to death."

*Jeeeong!*

He swung Failure. Dio couldn't cope with a single strike and was thrown back into the wall.

"Cough! Cough!"

The soldiers panicked as they watched Dio coughing up blood. Should they protect their leader? But wasn't that considered a rebellion against the duke? As the soldiers were troubled, the cool blade was held to Dio's jaw.

"Do you remember that day?"

"That day...?"

"The day that I found Pagma's Rare Book."

"I clearly remember."

Dio couldn't forget, since it was the day that Earl Ashur's anger pierced the sky. Grid gritted his teeth, "On that day, I was killed by your swords. I will give you a chance to experience the same pain."

Unlike a user who would resurrect if they died, the life of a NPC was finite. In Satisfy, killing an NPC was equivalent to murder in reality. Grid was unwilling to harm an NPC. It was even more so after forming a relationship with Khan. Due to that, he didn't intend to kill Dio and was just planning to terrify him.

However, Dio became honestly scared and pissed himself. He started foaming at the mouth and lost consciousness. It was an event that would become a lifelong trauma for Dio, who had been an elite since childhood.



"It seems strange if you're the duke of the kingdom." Piaro remarked.

Grid shrugged. "This was a dirty case. I have a bad chemistry with this place."

“So that’s why you hid your identity.”

The two people left the inn and were moving to exit Patrian. Coke rushed after them.

“Grid! Grid!”

Grid frowned. “Can’t you see that I am moving in secret? Why are you calling out the name of a person without thinking?”

“I-I’m really sorry. I was so excited that I wasn’t thinking...” Coke took out a piece of paper and asked Grid. “Please sign this!”

“...Sign?” Grid’s distorted expression disappeared. “Are you my fan?”

“You’re my idol! I want to be just like you!”

“Hmm hmm.”

He was an idol. Grid had been ignored by others for his whole life, so he had to be thrilled. He signed Coke’s piece of paper.

“Thank you.”

It was the moment when Coke, who would be included in the next 10 Rookies, became Grid’s real fan.

Meanwhile, Earl Ashur received the news about Dio.

“I can’t leave this alone.”

The embarrassment of his subordinate was the embarrassment of the owner! Earl Ashur became more furious at Grid and grasped his exact position with the magic spheres. Then he used Mass Teleport on him and his knights.

Grid stopped as he was leaving Patrian. He saw the light from the sky and Ashur appeared in front of him.

“In the end, you came here. Do you really want to die? Are you crazy?” Earl Ashur angrily asked Grid.



“I’m not like I was in the past. I’m no longer to be trifled with. Can you afford to go against me?” Grid asked arrogantly, and Earl Ashur scoffed.

“I’m the only great magician in the Eternal Kingdom, and one of the 10 great magicians on the continent.”

It wasn’t an exaggeration. Earl Ashur was the strongest man in the kingdom. That’s why he was appointed to the strategic point of Patrian.

“I’m not afraid of Pagma’s power. You aren’t Pagma. I have enough skills to get rid of you... Heok?”

Earl Ashur suddenly became shocked. It was because an overwhelming amount of energy was being emitted.

“I would like to compete with one of the 10 great magicians of the continent.”

It was the moment when Piaro’s competitive spirit was triggered.

“W-Who are you?”

Earl Ashur could no longer worry about Grid due to the unexpected emergence of a monster. It was putting the cart before the horse.

## CHAPTER 212

---

The Eternal Kingdom and Gauss Kingdom didn't have a good relationship. Over the past decades, there had been countless disputes and frequent bloodshed. The Eternal Kingdom used the guise of being a neutral kingdom to monopolize some of the Gauss Kingdom's products.

But the Gauss Kingdom wasn't able to induce conflict with the Eternal Kingdom. It was because the great magician Ashur was present at the border. Earl Ashur's power was like a nuclear warhead in modern society, so it was enough to suppress any conflicts.

But Piaro was more than that.

"W-Who are you?"

In the beginning, Earl Ashur had no interest in the beggar. No, he hadn't even noticed. He only paid attention to Grid. Now the beggar was emitting an energy that could reverse the situation. At this moment, Earl Ashur's five senses were only concentrated on the beggar. His original purpose of taking care of Grid disappeared.

'Is this fear I'm feeling?' Goosebumps covered his entire body. 'There was a monster like this hiding in the kingdom?'

Earl Ashur gulped as Piaro asked for a duel.

"I want to experience the skills of one of the continent's 10 great magicians."

"I refuse. I have no reason to fight you, nor do I want to fight."

Earl Ashur was adamant. But Piaro just pulled out his sword.

He was still obsessed with revenge, but he was also thirsty to fight against the strong. He was filled with a desire to become a sword saint. In particular, he was obsessed with Earl Ashur, because he had no experience fighting great magicians.

"You have no choice."

'Crazy bastard!'

This was his only chance to get revenge on Grid, who stole Pagma's Rare Book, as well as his son's crush. Once Grid arrived at Reidan and solidified his position as a duke, Earl Ashur would no longer be able to act against him. Later, he would be forced to bow before Duke Grid.

But at this critical junction, someone interfered. Earl Ashur's anger soared.

"Who the hell are you?"

Earl Ashur knew about the group with the strange name of Overgeared who were working with Grid. But there was no information about this beggar being part of Overgeared.

Where did this guy suddenly pop out from?

"Why are you with Grid? Are you his protector?"

"Protector? You're mistaken. I don't have anything to do with Duke Grid. This is my personal interest."

In the first place, did Grid need his protection? It was clear that this person called Ashur didn't know much about Grid.

"Anyway, you aren't Duke Grid's opponent. It is better for you to compete against me. Right now, I am in an incomplete condition."

"This person!"

Earl Ashur sounded resentful towards Piaro, but his head was calm.

'I must be calm. I shouldn't turn him into my enemy.'

The rumors might be exaggerated, but Grid's strength that he showed in Reinhardt wasn't negligible. Grid was praised as the kingdom's hero, so Earl Ashur had to fight seriously. After fighting with a much stronger opponent, could he take care of Grid?

'It is impossible.'

The wisest choice was to let Grid go. But.

‘I can’t miss the chance for revenge that will never come again.’ Earl Ashur made a decision. ‘Create a space where Grid and I can fight.’

In other words, create a three dimensional space. Space magic was different from other magic, so the consumption of magic power was very extreme. Even Earl Ashur had to consume half of his magic power to create a space ward. But he was willing to do this to handle Grid.

“Buy me some time.”

An earl was only supposed to have five knights, but Earl Ashur had dozens of knights as a commander of a fortified city. He not only had great individual power, but his forces surpassed that of his title.

The elite knights got into formation at once. In that gap, Earl Ashur chanted a spell.

“Shake hands.”

Elite knights? They were nothing compared to the knights of the Saharan Empire, the strongest nation on the continent. Furthermore, Piaro was the captain of the Red Knights.

“It’s a waste of manpower.”

Piaro’s missing sword shot straight ahead. A knight defended by raising his shield, but Piaro predicted this.

“Supreme Swordsmanship 3rd style.”

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

It was comparable with the skill of a martial artist. Piaro’s sword collided with the shield. The owner of the shield became a rag, while the other knights standing behind him spurted blood. It was the moment when the knights that Earl Ashur was proud of were knocked down by a single blow.

“Heok?”

“Defense is useless?”

The knights freaked out as it felt like they were hit by a tornado. Piaro leapt lightly. He didn't give the knights time to reform their formation.

"Kuaaaaak!"

He really was like a god. Piaro defied the laws of gravity as he stood in the air and wielded his sword. The vulnerable knights were unable to respond as the sword techniques fell from the sky. They couldn't use the advantage of numbers to threaten Piaro, so they could only defend.

However, Piaro's sword accelerated so quickly that it was difficult to chase with the eyes, making it virtually impossible to defend.

"Ugh!"

Jacks, the leader of the knights, swung his halberd and tried to counterattack in the gap when his men were being attacked. But it was difficult to hit, because Piaro rotated his body in the air at a dizzying speed.

"This monster!"

It was unbelievable. He completely avoided the large and wide attack of the halberd in the air? Was this old man a rumored assassin? Jacks continuously wielded his halberd. The opponent avoided it until the end. Then there was an unforgettable experience.

"What?"

The halberd started to be sucked into the rotating Piaro, as if it was attracted by a magnet. Jacks tried to withstand it with all his strength, but it was useless. He let go of the halberd.

*Jjejejeok!*

The halberd lost its master and shattered in the air.

"Keok."

The falling fragments of the halberd aimed precisely at the knights on the ground. They were wearing expensive armor, but whether it was coincidence of Piaro's

intentions, the fragments only aimed at the gaps on the armor. The armor was useless and the knights instantly collapsed.

“M-Monster...!”

Jacks couldn't close his mouth. Earl Ashur was even more surprised.

‘They couldn't last?’

One minute. That was the amount of time required to generate the ward. The 23 knights couldn't withstand that short amount of time.

*Cheok.*

At last, Piaro landed on the ground and stepped forward, ignoring Jacks. He neared Earl Ashur.

“In the end, we have to fight?” Earl Ashur screamed at Piaro. “That's right! Okay! Let's try it once!”

It seemed he couldn't avoid the fight. Earl Ashur pulled out a staff that was 50 cm in length. Most magicians used orbs due to the versatility of the orb that could store magic. However, Earl Ashur was fast in magic casting, so he used a staff that amplified magic.

“Haste!”

One of the most important elements in a magic battle was speed. The opponent must hit before the magician finished casting a spell, and the magician must finish casting a spell before allowing an attack. Earl Ashur quickly increased his movement speed with Haste and widened the distance with Piaro.

He already finished casting the next spell.

“Orion's Illusion!”

It was an illusion technique. Earl Ashur created five clones of himself and once again opened up the distance while Piaro was searching for the real body. Next was debuff magic.

“Soul Weakness!”

Piaro’s body became as sticky as oil and unpleasant magic power suppressed him.

“Disgusting.”

Piaro’s body lost its swiftness, but he bent like a bow and shot forward like a thunderbolt. He maximized his body’s ability to increase speed, offsetting the effect of the debuff.

‘Did he resist? My magic? No, it’s impossible.’

Earl Ashur’s eyes widened as he faced Piaro. But he tried to remain calm and finished casting the magic spell.

“Ice Tornado!”

It was a mixture of two A-grade spells with different attributes, and exerted more power than an A-grade spell. It was still significantly less powerful than S-grade magic, so why did he use it?

Even a great magician couldn’t cast S-grade spells in an instant. Using S-grade magic without precautionary measures against a person like Piaro was close to suicide.

*Jjejejejeok!*

Piaro’s body froze as he approached Earl Ashur. Earl Ashur’s magic power exceeded common sense, so there was no one who wouldn’t be frozen.

‘This guy won’t die like this.’

Earl Ashur believed that Piaro would recover within five seconds and started to chant a S-grade spell in that gap. However, he underestimated Piaro.

*Chaaeng!*

“...!”

Earl Ashur was shocked. An intangible energy was felt from the frost and it shattered before even a few words could be chanted?

“You’ve already recovered?”

It was too fast to use S-grade magic. He had to quickly accumulate more damage using A-grade spells. He belatedly responded to Piaro’s sword that was flying.

“Shield!”

It was the manifestation of basic defensive magic that even beginners could use.

“Great magic power.”

Piaro admired Ashur, who absorbed most of the damage with his shield. However, he continued to wield his sword. Earl Ashur stood firm. He tried to avoid as much damage as possible by relying on the previously activated Haste, while minimizing the actual damage using Shield.

Despite the continuous wounds he kept receiving, he used Shield while chanting S-grade magic in his head. Earl Ashur’s concentration was truly worthy of respect.

“Yes!”

Piaro was swinging his sword when he suddenly felt alarmed. He detected a strong magic power and used the Supreme Swordsmanship 5th style, a defense technique.

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

Something intangible shot out of Earl Ashur the moment the spell was completed.

“Fluid Escape.”

Fluid Escape was a spell that separated the soul and body of the caster for three seconds. The caster could control the soul that emerged from the body, while the body became immune to all damage.

*Jeeong!*

Earl Ashur’s body wasn’t damaged at all despite being hit.

“This is the power of Fluid Escape!”



Earl Ashur's soul passed through Piaro's body and dealt damage in proportion to his magic power.

"Kuk!"

Blood poured from Piaro.

"I can't tangle with this monster forever."

Earl Ashur's soul headed towards Grid, who was watching the battle with folded arms. He didn't give up on his original goal of aiming for Grid.

"Die!"

*Kwaaaang!*

Earl Ashur's soul went through the grid.

[You have suffered 40,985 damage.]

[You have received catastrophic damage all at once, and your spirit can't endure it.]

[You have resisted.]

Grid was unprepared for the damage and suffered. The soul's movement speed was so remarkable that the pavranium responded late. It was virtually impossible for a human to perceive it. Ashur's soul returned to his body.

"You deceived me!"

Piaro suffered great damage to his pride and wielded his sword, but there was a powerful shockwave as soon as the soul returned to the body. Piaro knew this fact, but he was confident that he could neutralize it with his blade.

However, Earl Ashur's magic power couldn't be pierced by the sword.

*Peeng!*

“This...!”

Piario was pushed back by the shockwave. While he was upset, Earl Ashur aimed at Grid.

“This is the end!”

Finally, his grudge would be repaid. Earl Ashur was determined to kill Grid while Grid was suffering from great damage and not in the right mindset. But what was this? Grid moved smoothly and Earl Ashur’s vision was covered with blue-white light.

“Kuaaaaak!”

Earl Ashur screamed at the unexpected attack. He suffered cumulative damage when reciting the S-grade magic, so he easily fell down.

Grid pointed Failure at him and said, “Beg me, Duke Grid, for your life.”

“W-What...!”

Grid’s sword damage was as powerful as Piario’s. No, maybe even more than that. Earl Ashur thought it was ridiculous.

## CHAPTER 213

---

‘He’s this strong?’

Earl Ashur was exposed to news about Grid’s actions in Reinhardt. The strongest golem army, that hundreds of thousands of troops couldn’t go against, was cut like carrots. But weren’t rumors always exaggerated?

During Grid’s novice adventurer days. Earl Ashur remembered that he had no talent and was a fool, so he had no choice but to laugh at the rumors. Grid might have the ability of a legend, but it was dulled because he couldn’t use it properly. The nobles must’ve intentionally inflated the rumors in order to boost the morale of the people.

But that wasn’t it. Now Grid was the hero in the rumors. At that moment, Earl Ashur’s memories of the beginner Grid were completely blown away. His narrow perception disappeared and he started to perceive the current Grid correctly.

‘Indeed, this is an absolute presence.’

The two eyes reminiscent of rotten fish. The mean eyes when facing the weak now shone as they contemplated the world in a much stronger face. The weak body that always shrank back. The pathetic flesh that ran away when hunting orcs and was killed by the orc captain, it was now standing firmly like a mountain.

That disgusting face. He didn’t care about how he looked and was always jealous of others. That horrible face now emitted a dignity that charmed all the people of the kingdom.

‘Is it possible for a person to change this way...?’

“You want me to beg for my life?”

Earl Ashur quietly observed Grid and the blue sword in his hand. The sword gleaming with a white light was something that could only be seen in legends. Earl Ashur felt a fear of death. His instincts were shouting at him to succumb to Grid.

This was the effect of Grid’s high dignity stat. However, Earl Ashur had the highest pride as the strongest person in the Eternal Kingdom and a great magician, so he didn’t

give in easily.

“I’d rather die.”

He hadn’t been sure Pagma’s Rare Book actually existed.

Earl Ashur decided to use Grid, who was easy to take advantage of. However, he gave reasonable compensation and didn’t put a time limit on the quest. It was a quest he seriously entrusted to Grid, because he believed in Grid’s inherent tenacity. Did he give a novice adventurer the quest in an attempt to trick him?

No, it was Grid who abandoned the faith first. Grid was blinded by greed after discovering Pagma’s Rare Book and broke the promise, trying to take the book for himself.

‘That wasn’t all.’

His precious son Bland had been in love with Irene for many years. The woman who seemed likely to marry Bland had been taken away by Grid. It was better to choose death than to submit to Grid, who wasn’t just his enemy, but his son’s enemy as well.

Grid was baffled as he watched Earl Ashur tightly close his eyes.

‘He really wants me to kill him?’

Grid had hated Earl Ashur since he was killed. But it was his choice to quickly find Pagma’s Rare Book without understanding the subject. He wasn’t forced by Earl Ashur. Nevertheless, whenever he suffered a trial, he blamed everything on Earl Ashur.

His habit of blaming others was the problem. Strictly speaking, there was no reason for Grid to resent Earl Ashur. If Pagma’s Rare Book hadn’t existed, Grid wouldn’t have found it or turned into Pagma’s Descendant.

As a result, Earl Ashur was Grid’s benefactor. Of course, that was just the result, and there was no need for Grid to feel gratitude. It was through Grid’s willpower that he found Pagma’s Rare Book and became Pagma’s Descendant. It was due to Grid’s own efforts that he could grow until now, and it wasn’t thanks to Earl Ashur.

Anyway, this was the conclusion.

‘I have overwhelmed him but... Looking at this, I don’t need to kill him.’

Grid still didn’t like Earl Ashur. In fact, he had the experience of being murdered by Earl Ashur’s knights, and he had been directly threatened with death by Earl Ashur, so it wasn’t easy to feel forgiveness.

But it wasn’t enough to feel the urge to murder him. His conscience didn’t allow him to.

“Sigh, okay. Forget it.”

“...?” Earl Ashur was confused as Grid sighed and took back his sword. “I tried to kill you. But you will spare me?”

Earl Ashur’s strength transcended his title, but he was still an earl. Grid was a duke, but Earl Ashur treated him badly and even tried to kill him because of a grudge of the past. Now that he discovered that Grid was really qualified to be a duke, Earl Ashur was aware that he committed a crime. He thought it was natural to be executed, so he couldn’t accept this.

“Is there something you will demand separately of me?”

Earl Ashur eyed Grid warily.

‘I had mercy on him, yet he’s still doubting me?’ Grid’s heart beat faster. The Grid of the past would’ve been swept away by his emotions and spoken nonsense. ‘It’s better to ask for something in exchange for saving him.’

Grid had learned to take advantage of certain situations. He had learned it by watching Lauel for three months. What could he get from Earl Ashur?

Grid thought about it.

‘Money? Jewelry? Land? Items?’

He was greedy. As Grid was deeply troubled about what he should ask for, Lauel sent him a whisper.

*–Grid, everyone has arrived in Reidan except for Euphemina. When are you going to arrive?*

*–I think it will take three more days.*

*–Three days? What is taking so long? Can't you come quickly if you use Fly? Come quickly. There is a mountain of work to do.*

*–I have a companion. But my companion doesn't want to ride a carriage, so we're walking. Just handle things for a few days.*

*–Companion...? Who are you talking about?*

*–You'll see when you meet him. It is good that you got in touch with me. I actually...*

Grid briefly explained to Lauel about the relationship between him and Earl Ashur, as well as the current situation.

*–... In these circumstances, what should I ask from Earl Ashur?*

*–Earl Ashur...*

As one of the 10 great magicians on the continent, Earl Ashur was a huge celebrity. Lauel already knew about him, so he thought carefully before asking.

*–There is a story I've heard from Vantner. I heard he caused a disturbance along with Earl Ashur's son on the day of your wedding to Irene?*

*–Really? I didn't know. I couldn't pay attention to anything else on that day.*

*–Pay attention to him. Ask Earl Ashur to give you his son.*

*–Eh? What are you saying?*

Lauel clearly predicted that Grid wouldn't understand and added a detailed explanation.

*–Earl Ashur is famous for his love for his son. If you keep his son, he won't be able to go against you again and he will have to move according to your will. Earl Ashur's mighty power will surely help one day.*

'What a great guy.'

Laue! looked at benefits rather than money, so Grid thought he was truly great. One day he would become smart like Laue!. A wicked smile appeared on Grid's face and Earl Ashur's anxiety was heightened.

Then Grid demanded, "Give me your son."

"What...?" It was like a bolt out of the blue to Earl Ashur. He absolutely couldn't accept it. "You mean to take my son hostage!"

The 48 year old Earl Ashur was still young and beautiful. His appearance was like the protagonist of a manhwa, and he had been very popular since childhood. When he was a young man and still active among the social circles, dozens of women clung to him.

But Earl Ashur only loved one woman. She wasn't beautiful, but Earl Ashur fell for her warm-heartedness. Their marriage was successful. They had two sons and lived happily.

It was a short moment of happiness.

Unfortunately, Earl Ashur's wife suffered from a terminal illness and died at a young age. Earl Ashur tasted the pain of his heart breaking. However, he didn't have time to mourn. He had an obligation to defend the kingdom and had to take care of his two young sons.

Earl Ashur was faithful to his duties and raised his sons at the same time. His first son became a royal mage, and his second son became a magic swordsman because he showed talent in both magic and swordsmanship. Earl Ashur was able to fill the blank spot left by his wife with his pride for his two sons.

But the heavens were too harsh on Earl Ashur.

Just two years ago. His first son went on a monster conquest and died. After that, Earl Ashur's nature became somewhat strange. His gentleness disappeared. However, he still cared about his remaining son. Bland was his only blood, and Earl Ashur cherished him more than his own life.

"My flesh and soul might burn, but I will never sell my son. Just kill me."

'Stubborn...'

What should he do? Grid wasn't smart, so the only method he could come up with was to use force. But this problem didn't need to be resolved with force.

"I will follow you."

A blond man appeared while Grid was feeling confused. The person was Bland.

"Why are you...!?"

Bland ignored the panicked Earl Ashur and bowed before Grid. "I, Bland de Ian, son of Earl Ashur, greet Duke Grid, the great hero of this kingdom."

Bland and Grid had dueled once over Irene. But in the end, Bland was defeated and kicked out from the wedding. After that, he lived in pain for a while, but now he was determined.

"I will go to Reidan according to Duke Grid's will."

It was the only way to save his father. Earl Ashur's face turned white.

"Bland! Why are you deciding this by yourself?"

Grid was the rival who deprived Bland of his beloved. Earl Ashur couldn't tolerate his son being Grid's hostage. He started to gather magic power in his pained body.

"I will kill you and give your soul to God Yatan if you touch one hair on my son!"

Bland came forward before Grid could frown. He fell to his knees.

"Duke Grid, my father lost his temper because he cares too much about me. Please show mercy one more time."

"B-Bland..."

He was begging to his rival because of his father! Earl Ashur was shocked by causing more humiliation to his son and fell silent. Then Bland reassured him. "Father, I will go and study under Duke Grid. Please trust in your son and wait for me to return. Don't skip any meals."

"Ugh..."



Earl Ashur was frustrated. His eyes had been clouded by his grudge, and now his son was taken as a hostage. Grid placed a hand on his shoulder.

“Earl Ashur, don’t worry. I will look after your son.”

*Ssik.*

Wasn’t he a demon? He could smile brightly and enjoy the pain and sorrows of others. To Earl Ashur, Grid didn’t look like a human. However, Grid was obviously a human.

‘Please don’t overdo it. I won’t eat your son.’

Grid inwardly spoke before glancing at Piaro and Bland.

“Let’s go.”

After a few moments. The only thing left was a disastrous scene where Earl Ashur looked completely insane and the wounded knights looked wretched.

## CHAPTER 214

---

Grid and Piaro walked alongside each other, while Bland awkwardly followed behind. Grid looked at Piaro to verify.

“How was it? The skills of one of the 10 great magicians on the continent?”

“It was more than I expected. He was mentally strong enough to withstand my oppression. If he used an orb as a weapon, it would’ve been a close fight.”

For magicians, the staff was a weapon with the concept of high risk and high return. There was no magic storage function, so its stability was poor, but the magic amplification rate was so high that it was possible to use a powerful one-shot.

Most magicians were burdened by the high risk and turned away from the staff, but Earl Ashur had overpowering magic casting speed. Unlike regular magicians, he used a staff as a weapon, and that was a weakness when dealing with someone strong like Piaro today. He was defeated before he could use magic in front of Piaro.

‘Ashur is really strong.’

Grid didn’t show it, but he was terrified when hit by Ashur’s Fluid Escape.

He wore the Armor of Holy Light made out of the god mineral adamantium by the legendary blacksmith Pagma. The legendary item had the effect of ‘50% reduction in magic damage,’ so he was surprised that he suffered 40,000 damage from a single strike.

‘Ashur showed a more powerful damage than the other boss monsters I have come against...’

It was overwhelming. Grid received so much damage, while Piaro survived Earl Ashur’s attack without any damage.

‘Did he temporarily raise his defense through the operation of qi?’

Grid was reminded of body protection qi from martial arts.

“How strong is Asmophel that you can’t get revenge by yourself?”

Piario grimaced as he heard the dirty name. “It’s difficult to reach him, rather than him being strong. There is nobody who doesn’t know my face in the empire. If I step foot in the empire, I will die immediately.”

“Stop complaining. Who can kill you so easily? Even if you’re besieged, can’t you use Fated to Perish to knock them down? You don’t have to worry if you fought like you did against Ashur.”

“If it was so simple, would I be hiding for the past two years? You have no idea of the power of the empire.”

Piario suddenly stopped.

“What’s going on?”

“A monster.”

“Monster?”

After escaping from the thick forest, Grid turned his gaze in the direction Piario was indicating. An endless expanse of desert stretched out before them.

“I don’t even see an ant, let alone a monster?”

Piario spoke briefly towards Grid, who was trying to see what was visible.

“Below.”

“Eh?”

There was a subtle vibration from the ground. Grid checked the sand and moved as he realized his mistake.

*Kwaang!*

In the place where Grid were just standing, a huge elongated creature came up. It was a centipede. An extra large centipede that had lived for thousands of years.

*Kiyaaak!*

“Ugh.”

The length of the body was well over 10m, and the hundreds of legs were as big as human limbs. They wriggled in a disgusting manner. Grid felt disgusted by the creature that had a yellow liquid pouring from it and blocked his nose.

“You’re squeamish like a girl.”

“What does being a man or woman have to do with anything? Dammit.”

This was an insect. It was the first time he saw such a big one. It was much bigger than the spiders in Kesan Canyon. Grid jumped and cut down at the centipede. The surface of the centipede was very hard. It wasn’t easily destroyed by the +9 Failure, an absolute weapon. It was a defense comparable to the ancient weapon.

‘Is it a monster that specializes in defense?’

The determined Grid didn’t consider a counterattack and kept striking. However, the centipede was surprisingly agile. It quickly moved its massive body and attacked.

[You have suffered 6,300 damage.]

“What?”

It was safe to say that this was the first time Grid suffered so much damage from a normal monster after wearing the Holy Light set, the strongest armor currently in existence. A very surprised Grid corrected his posture. He finally took the battle seriously.

But the desert terrain hindered him.

“Che.”

Grid’s stride was off due to the thick sand, leading to a weakening of his grip. A normal person would’ve suffered a great setback, but this was Grid.

“Fly!”

He used the magic possessed by Braham’s Boots to fly into the sky and strike the centipede’s head. However, the counterattack wasn’t formidable enough. Grid was pushed back and winced. In the meantime, another centipede emerged from the ground and Grid was pincer attacked by two enemies.

Piario tried to help, but suddenly stopped. He carefully observed and advised Grid.

“When attacking in any situation, place weight on the end of your sword. It is the basics even when flying through the air. Mobilize not just your limbs, but the muscles in your neck, and then transfer your weight to the end of your sword. You are too distracted to do the basic movements. Organic movements are needed to get the most out of your power. But before that, fix the habit of your head first...”

‘What is he saying?’

Grid was disturbed by Piario while fighting the two centipedes. It was impossible for him to understand what Piario was talking about, so he was confused.

‘I’m playing right now, so why is he acting like this is a sword dojo?’

In the first place, he didn’t need it. He ignored the words of the best swordsman pouring into his ears and leaned on his skills, as he always did.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Link!”

The dozens of blue-white energy blades fell and shattered the two centipedes.

[The giant worm has been destroyed.]

[2,330,900 experience has been acquired.]

[The giant worm has been destroyed.]

[2,340,100 experience has been acquired.]

[The giant worm’s leg has been acquired.]

The giant worms gave a huge amount of experience. Grid was surprised and confirmed the details of the giant worm.

[Giant Worm]

Level: 330

A worm that lives in the western part of the Eternal Kingdom. It dwells deep in the earth, and once it detects the presence of creatures, it will emerge through the ground and attack. It is a very common species in the western desert.

Some scholars speculate that they can be used as medicines, but in fact, they have no nutritional value.

‘Level 330? A monster of this level is a common worm?’

There were such strong monsters in the western part of the Eternal Kingdom, but very few users knew about it. Most users weren’t able to advance to the west because they couldn’t break through the habitat of the twin ogres, so information was scarce.

‘The western part is the most difficult area in the Eternal Kingdom. So when creating a character, there are no starting villages in the west.’

This was good news. Wasn’t Reidan located at the end of the western area? There was a possibility that it was inhabited by level 400 monsters. Grid and the Overgeared Guild could hunt the strongest monsters, which meant they could grow quickly.

But if he thought about it.

‘No, wait. Then isn’t it impossible for beginner or mid level users to come to Reidan?’

If there was no influx of users in Reidan, Grid would have to grow the economy solely based on NPCs. It was the worst. There was a setback in his plan to get rich from hundreds of thousands of people.

“Dammit...” Grid frowned and cursed. Then another giant worm popped up. “Ah, I don’t know.”

Grid didn't panic. He carelessly thought that Lael would take care of everything and concentrated on the monsters in front of him.

'This is an opportunity to raise my level.'

After the reunion with Euphemina, Grid hadn't been able to hunt for a while due to large and small incidents. His level was stagnant at 270, so he was delighted to raise it by hunting these chunks of experience.

"I will begin in earnest."

Grid checked his status window. At the time of the National Competition, he was level 253 and had 230 stat points. Now he was level 270 and had 400 stat points.

"Invest all points in agility."

He referenced Piaro's stats.

[Agility has permanently increased by 400.]

His agility rose by 400. In other words, Grid had elevated his agility by 40 levels and his body felt completely lighter. He started to hunt the giant worms at a quick pace compared to the past.

Piario remained on the ground and constantly advised Grid in the sky.

"If you concentrate more strength in your thighs and buttocks, then your upper body's forward speed will increase. This means that the speed of your sword will increase. In addition, it is better not to think about the direction of the swing and just do it naturally."

'Who cares about my thighs? And what is this nonsense about telling me not to think? Am I Jude?'

The teachings of a great swordsman could increase even the level of a useless knight. In particular, Piario was able to teach because he mastered the Empire's Military Tactics and had experience commanding the Red Knights. There were many people

who would pay money to receive his teachings.

Grid was receiving it for free, so it was like winning the lottery. It was an opportunity to dramatically increase his so-called 'control.' But he didn't know how to appreciate it and found the advice jarring.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship, Kill!"

*Kiyaaaaak!*

[The giant worm has been destroyed.]

[2,339,500 experience has been acquired.]

"Puhahat! I hope I will level up today?"

Grid's experience gauge had accumulated a lot before the golem invasion, so it was already over 70%. He used his skills and enthusiastically killed the giant worm. On the other hand, Piaro was curious. It was because Grid's abilities didn't improve, despite his teachings.

'Why?'

Piario thought that Grid was an extraordinary and clever person. The evidence was that he didn't immediately execute Earl Ashur, taking his son as hostage instead in order to set foot on the political stage.

'A person that smart should be able to understand my teachings.'

So why didn't his skills improve? Piario was puzzled and came to a conclusion.

'Pride.'

As Pagma's Descendant, Grid wanted to refuse the teachings of people other than Pagma.

'He would be much stronger if he could take advantage of his physical abilities.'



If Grid's basics were tightened up, he would be a great sparring opponent. But it wasn't easy.

'Hmm?'

Piaro's gaze suddenly shifted to Bland. Bland was struggling alone in the distance against a giant worm. However, his skills had risen dramatically compared to when he hunted the horned goblins a few hours ago. He had absorbed Piaro's teachings towards Grid.

'Indeed, a lion's cub.'

A rare talent. He was a genius who inherited his father's magic power and a talent in swordsmanship. Piaro thought that he should teach Bland well in the several days before they arrived in Reidan.



[Unified Rankings]

1st. Kraugel – White Swordsman.

2nd. Zibal – Debirion's Envoy

3rd. Chris – Destruction Warrior

'Chris finally got his third advancement class. Destruction Warrior, he chose the class that fit his alignment the best. He would've received it a little quicker if it wasn't for the golem army.'

It was Kraugel's habit to check the rankings from time to time. Looking at the trends of those pursuing him was the basics.

"Now then."

He had been hunting for 15 hours without stopping, so he started sorting the items in his full inventory. He calculated the items that weren't priced yet, the items needed for production and quests, the remaining junk items, and if he could get more from selling them to an NPC or user.

After a while.

Kraugel finished organizing his items and rose from this spot. Then he went through his skills list and made plans.

‘I have raised the skill level of the two sword style to intermediate, so I should challenge it again.’

Kraugel, who chose the third class of White Swordsman, had crossed from the West to the East Continent, but he couldn’t fully capture it. He struggled against the high barrier of the East Continent for a while, and got new titles and steadily raised his level, becoming even stronger.

His next goal was to attack the eastern and southern parts of the Saharan Empire, as well as the labyrinths in Orias, and the western part of the Eternal Kingdom. After staying in the West Continent for awhile, he would once again challenge the uncharted land of the East Continent.

Kraugel was a true gamer and the 1st ranked user, playing the game with joy and thorough planning.

It was a lot different from someone else.

## CHAPTER 215

---

Reidan was a three or four days' walk away from Patrian. However, Grid's party encountered monsters all the time. They didn't avoid it, so their journey was delayed several times.

'The experience is really good.'

It had been six days since leaving Patrian.

Meanwhile, Grid hunted the strongest monsters in the west and reached level 273. In addition, his experience gauge was at 60%. It was a stunning level-up speed that users couldn't dream of matching, simply due to the fact that he leveled up every two days.

Grid didn't know this, but even Kraugel wasn't able to level up as quickly as Grid currently was when he was level 270.

'I will be level 275 by the time I reach Reidan,' Grid excitedly thought to himself. Even the top rankers would find it hard to hunt these western monsters, so he was proud of his items and his skills.

'This game is truly about items. Control? That was something that only losers who didn't have good items worried about. Puhahat!'

In the first place, control was a means used by the weak to try and win against the strong. He didn't need control if he had overwhelming power. Grid had such a narrow mindset ever since his success in the Malacus raid. He had no doubts that items were the best.

But that firm belief of Grid's was about to be shaken.



"Pant pant... Wow, this is really dirty. The giant worms before were just exercise."

Grid was exhausted as he walked through the vast desert towards Reidan. Thanks to his passive resistance, he didn't get heat stroke. However, the heat was enough to make his stamina fall faster than usual. Moreover, he couldn't adapt to the desert terrain.

On the other hand, the monsters kept becoming stronger and stronger. Four basilisks, monsters that were treated as boss-grade monsters in the north, appeared before Grid. Grid succeeded in unleashing all sorts of skills against the basilisks, but he was pincer attacked by the monsters and faced a crisis.

“Ah, really! Let me take a break!”

He was at his wit's end. His control was immature so he constantly allowed the monsters to attack him, so even the best armor couldn't endure and he lost health. In the situation, it wouldn't be strange if his invincible passive was activated.

‘Even Braham's golem army wouldn't be able to exert much power against the monsters here.’

The western monsters were strong and numerous. It was the reason why the kingdom chose to let the giant worms spread instead of subjugating them.

‘It is impossible for the kingdom to manage the west properly. So the king sent me here.’

It was a correct guess. King Wiesbaden wished for Grid to cleanse the west that had become barren because of the mighty monsters, giving him Reidan. It showed absolute confidence in Grid. However, Grid thought he was used by the king and couldn't help cursing.

*Kiyaaaaak!*

As Grid cursed the king, a massive desert toad stretched out its tongue, its sticky mucus flopping out from its mouth and covering Grid's body. This mucus was a type of poison that paralyzed the target in an instant. However...

[You have resisted.]

Grid resisted and fought back. The +9 Failure passed through the toad's fat belly. However, the western monsters were so weak to die from one of Grid's blows. The toad moved its tongue like a whip for a counterattack.

‘Damn!’

Grid’s reaction was too late as he was buried deep in the toad’s stomach. *Ku tang tang tang!*

Grid was stronger than steel and full of resilience, but he was struck in the head and fell. Other monsters swarmed to his fallen body.

“Kuak...! Transcend and Transcended Link’s cooldown time isn’t over!” Grid tended to depend on skills as he lacked control, but there was a fatal weakness. If the skills weren’t available due to the cooldown time, he couldn’t help being weak. “Piaro! Help me... Eh?”

In the end, Grid tried to rely on Piaro. However, he was surprised. It was because Bland started moving. Grid hadn’t been paying any attention during the last six days, but Bland had become extremely strong during that short period.

‘What is this all of a sudden?’

This was the person who struggled against the level 280 horned goblins only six days ago. But now he was fighting one-on-one with the western monsters that were at least 50 levels higher than him, so he had truly developed.

‘Surely, it isn’t a bug...’

What was the secret behind this sudden growth? Grid questioned as he moved to the rear after Bland pulled aggro. Then he equipped the Great Lord’s Sword and examined Bland.

Name: Bland

Age: 25 Gender: Male

Occupation: Magic Swordsman

Title: Great Magician’s Son

He has inherited the magical talents of his father, Earl Ashur. Receive a bonus to his magic casting speed and mana regeneration speed. Every time his level increased, his intelligence will increase significantly.

Title: Marquis Steim's Disciple

He once learned swordsmanship from Marquis Steim, a swordsman of the north. When a blade type weapon is equipped, attack power will increase by 20% and attack speed by 10%.

Level: 255

Strength: 1,331/1,990 Stamina: 420/1,030

Agility: 519/1,401 Intelligence: 2,540/4,550

Charm: 212/800

Skills: Northern Swordsmanship (B), Spell Casting Acceleration (S), Magic Power Concentration (S), 9 C-grade Spells, 5 B-grade spells, 2 A-grade spells.

\* Click on the details to examine the spells that the target has currently acquired.

Bland. In his childhood and adolescence, he studied magic under his father and swordsmanship under Marquis Steim. He followed the typical elite course, and was a young genius considered to be the cornerstone of the Eternal Kingdom in the future.

“There is nothing special?”

Grid had observed Bland's details shortly after obtaining him as a hostage. The difference between then and now was only five levels, and a small rise in stats.

“Then why did he become so much stronger?”

Grid was curious.

“That's it. You understood correctly. You shouldn't play around when holding a sword in your hand. Rather than avoiding the enemy's attacks, it is better to aim for defense or a counterattack. Even if your opponent is stronger than you, they will be easier to defeat if you keep moving your sword.”

Piario was talking to Bland. Then Grid realized.

‘It is thanks to Piario's teachings!’

He might be a great swordsman, but was it possible for a person to grow so quickly just from his advice? Grid started to observe Piaro and Bland. Unlike before, he didn't go ahead alone and hunted monsters near them.

"You are too tied up with being a magic swordsman. Magic casting and swordsmanship can't be done at the same time, so a gap will occur. However, this doesn't mean you should throw away magic. You have more talent in magic than in the sword, so if you are facing a stronger enemy, you should concentrate on your magic. Your swordsmanship is ideal for minimal defense.

Piaro would give advice and Bland would apply the teachings in real time whenever a monster appeared. Bland's rapid growth had a big impact on Grid. Learning how to fight properly. In other words, the power of control was more than he thought possible.

'... If I combine control with items, how much stronger can I become?'

Grid finally became aware of it. He was able to understand that he would reach his limits in the future if he just relied on his items. In the end, he asked Piaro, "Please teach me as well."

"Didn't you say that there was no need before?"

"Originally, a person's mind is flexible. Now I want to learn from you."

'Is he because he can no longer sit back and watch Bland grow alone? Did he lose his confidence as Pagma's Descendant?'

Piaro was able to understand that Grid was an unprincipled person. He was the type of person that Piaro disliked. But Piaro readily accepted Grid's request. It was in the hope that he could enhance his strength by raising Grid's.

Piaro's frozen mind that was obsessed with revenge was slowly reviving as he met Grid and Bland. It was a small but significant change.

After that.

"Don't move your head. How many times do I have to tell you?"

"Isn't it natural to shake my head every time I move? How can I control my body?"

“Try to make an effort. Think while you are fighting. And don’t rely on Fly. Warriors must become accustomed to various terrains, so fighting in the desert will be a valuable experience for you.”

“How can I wield my sword when my feet are buried in the sand?”

“Put your weight on the tip of your sword, not your feet.”

“So how do I do that?”

“...How many times do I need to explain that you have to move your muscles well?”

“No, how do I move my muscles?”

“...”

The reason why Bland could grow rapidly was that he was a genius. The best teacher and best disciple met, so the synergy exploded. But Grid was a stupid person. It wasn’t easy for even a great swordsman to teach him.

Piario suffered as he taught Grid, who lacked comprehension and was slow to learn. He started to feel pain.

‘I thought he was a smart person, but that isn’t it...’

How could such a stupid person have gained Pagma’s power and inheritance? Piario wondered. He honestly wanted to give up on teaching Grid. However, he couldn’t take back his words so he kept teaching Grid.

Grid grumbled that it was difficult and complex, but he did his best to follow the teachings. Grid repeated this in the three days before arrived at Reidan and finally improved.

“He is a little bit ordinary now.”

Grid was able to build up the basic skills of a swordsman. This was the limit of his capabilities and of a great swordsman’s teaching ability.

‘I don’t think it is possible for Grid to grow beyond this.’



Piara was overwhelmed with a sense of defeat. Then Grid's party arrived at Reidan.

## CHAPTER 216

---

Nine days ago.

The Overgeared members utilized the excellent transportation method of carriages and arrived in Reidan ahead of Grid, but they tasted huge disappointment.

The best city in the west, Reidan! According to the map, it was the second largest city of the Eternal Kingdom. The Overgeared members were full of expectations, but they were baffled because it looked more like a ruin.

“What happened here?”

“Wow, there is nothing big in the city.”

“The shops are closed, the doors broken and the poor are on the street...”

“The rice fields are like a wasteland.”

“In the first place, doesn’t the population seem too small?”

Huroi, Lauel, and Faker remained calm while the guild members were making a disturbance. They looked over Reidan because bringing up its information.

Name: Reidan

Size: Big City

Ruler: Grid (Duke of the Eternal Kingdom. Master of the Overgeared Guild)

Administrator: Arik (C-grade administrative ability)

\* The higher the administrative ability of the administrator, the higher the overall development of the estate.

Affiliation: The Eternal Kingdom

Population: NPCs – 20,551. Players – 0.

Troops: Knights – 2 (Huroi, Lauel).

Soldiers – 141

Security: 5/100

\* The state of security is the worst. It isn't unusual if the people turn into a mob straight away. Gangsters and monsters will often pop up near the village.

\* Security will increase hourly in proportion to the number of soldiers.

\* People jobs and food for a policing activity is not available, even if the police do not rise.

Internal Affairs: 169/4,500

\* Increasing the number of shopping malls, public cultural facilities and buildings will increase the internal affairs number.

Foreign Affairs: The Butin Barony in the Saharan Empire.

Forces hostile to the ruler: Yatan Church.

Forces hostile to your affiliated groups: Gauss Kingdom, Luvia Principality.

Specialties: None.

Distinguished Figure: None.

“The situation isn't as good as I expected.”

“It seems like it.”

While moving from Winston to Reidan, the guild members were attracted to the monsters of the west and devoted themselves to hunting. They waited for monsters to attack the moving carriage, then quickly hunted them for experience. Therefore, they thought the west was a blessed land.

But Huroi, Lauel, and Faker thought that the strong monsters in the west were a negative point. The monsters were so strong that the accessibility of general users was low, and the area would be difficult to manage. Now the reality they faced was worse than their expectations.

“A city that can accommodate over 500,000 people only has a population of 20,000...”

“Furthermore, there are no users.”

“The biggest priority right now is to pay the people raise the security level.”

The Overgeared Guild currently had 5 million gold in funds. 5 million gold. While that amount of gold might sound large for a single person, it wasn't enough to fund a big city. Not only that, 5 million gold didn't even seem like enough to develop an empty, desolate city.

Now they had to pay expenses to raise the goodwill of the people? Was it even possible to produce food in this city in the first place? It wasn't possible to even make barley bread. It was inevitable that they would have to import ingredients, but merchants were aware of the situation and wouldn't come to Reidan.

‘Considering the transportation cost...’

Lauel calculated that he had to set a minimum of 3 silver for one meal. If it was 20,000 people, he would have to pay 600 gold. This was one meal. It was ridiculous to spend hundreds of thousands of gold on meals until a fundamental solution was set up.

But Lauel couldn't alienate the people. Did he feel compassion when seeing their skinny selves? No. That was irrelevant. People were the national power. He needed to restore them first, then there would be a rise in security and labor. There was no other choice.

“After making the people useful, set them to clearing the fields.”

“But doesn't the lord have to give permission?”

Huroi was cautious. He knew that restoring the people was the most pressing issue, but he wondered if Grid would understand. Grid would wonder why they were wasting money on people's meals.

Huroi spoke to the worried Lauel,

“South Korean doesn't give up on making hot pepper paste just because of worms. That is a saying in South Korea.”

This was the right choice, even if it was against Grid's will. This was Chief Lauel's conviction to grow the Overgeared Guild. However, the saying was too provocative.

Huroi thought about the saying that Lael mentioned and became indignant, “Don’t compare My Lord to measly worms!”

“Ah no, that’s not what I meant.”

Lael sweated profusely as he tried to soothe Huroi. On the other hand, Faker disappeared from next to the two men, moving through the yellow dust before arriving at the castle.

“Why didn’t you move quickly after hearing that the new lord’s men had arrived? Your greeting is late!”

“T-That... I was afraid that I would be stoned by the people if I left the castle and that made me late.”

“Pathetic guy. You are armed with sword and armor, but are afraid of rocks? What a worthless person. Tsk tsk.”

A fat, middle-aged man hurried to the entrance of the castle with his soldiers. This greasy man’s name was Arik, the administrator of Reidan. He was a baronet and often received treatment as a noble.

Faker pointed his dagger at Arik without hesitation.

“Hiik!”

Arik exclaimed as he saw the shadows in the yellow dust.

“W-Who are you?”

Faker replied in a cold voice, “A person with a lot of questions for you.”

“W-What...? Kiyaaack~!”

It was in an instant. Faker and Arik disappeared into the yellow dust like they weren’t there in the first place.

“Administrator Arik?”

The stunned soldiers looked around, but they couldn’t find any traces of Arik.



“This is a normal level?”

Bland had watched Grid training under Piaro for the past three days. Bland originally saw Grid as very strong. Grid would become much stronger under Piaro’s teachings and would have no education.

However, Piaro evaluated Grid as ordinary. Grid was satisfied that he wasn’t worse compared to others.

Bland couldn’t believe it. ‘Why are his skills so bad and dull? Doesn’t he have great skills?’

It was the difference in perspective. From Bland’s point of view, Earl Steim and Phoenix were the strongest swordsmen until he met Piaro, but Grid seemed to have a lot of talent. On the other hand, Grid compared his abilities to the top rankers and boss monsters, and decided this was good.

Then what about Piaro? He evaluated Grid’s ability as ‘poor in comparison to his amount of power.’

The conclusion.

“Puhahat! Now I can easily hunt monsters in the west without having to rely on skills!”

“This is just the basics. Only the lousy people rely solely on skills. You still have a long way to go.”

“Wouldn’t it be better to keep practicing steadily? Continue teaching me in the future.”

“I refuse. It is unlikely that your skills will improve, even if I keep teaching you.”

“Don’t give up so easily. It isn’t that hard, is it?”

“This is a realistic analysis, not one based on any emotions.”

Grid was strong. It was true that he was lacking control skills compared to top rankers, but from a normal point of view, he was beyond the average level. However, the monsters in the west were so strong that his limits started to show.

“Hap!”

Now Grid had perfectly adapted to the strange terrain of the desert. He ran on the sand with light footsteps and freely wielded Failure, causing the monsters of the west to collapse. As a result, Grid reached level 275 and finally arrived in Reidan.

“This is your city?”

The scale of Reidan that came into view was huge. The exterior walls weren’t very high or well-maintained, but they spectacularly stretched out along the horizon.

“This is a huge city comparable to the capital of a kingdom.”

Grid smiled at Piaro’s admiring words.

“It is the second biggest city in the Eternal Kingdom after Reinhardt.”

Grid was filled with anticipation. He imagined hundreds of thousands of people in Reidan greeting him with confetti.

“Let’s go.”

Grid prompted Bland and Piaro and increased the pace. Then he was confused as he found people working on clearing the land.

‘Are they refugees?’

The people were skinny, dressed in poor clothes and looked like refugees. Grid wondered why they were doing field work in Reidan.

‘They seem to be slaves.’

He wondered if the people of Reidan hired slaves to work on the farmland. Grid tsked at the thought. ‘They might be slaves but they should be properly fed. What unscrupulous employers.’

The people of Reidan didn’t seem to have a good mentality. However, their mentality had nothing to do with Grid.

‘They are just my taxes.’

*Lululula.*

Grid looked at the nearest entrance to the city and hummed with a happy heart. He imagined a fanfare and hundreds of thousands of people welcoming him. However.

“Eh?”

Grid witnessed a bizarre sight and stopped walking. The Overgeared members were working among the tens of thousands of slaves?

‘W-What?’

Grid saw the Overgeared members sweating hard as they worked and stopped humming. An ominous thought struck him before Regas saw him and ran over with a bright smile.

“You finally came!”

Regas’ solid upper body was stained with sweat and dust. He looked like a worker in a coal mine so Grid asked him.

“What are you doing right now?”

“As you can see, we are clearing the fields with the people.”

“...With the people?”

Where were the people? Grid only saw the Overgeared members and the slaves.

“I greet My Lord.”

Huroi came running. He was also sweaty. Grid saw the rake in his hand and asked again, “What are you doing right now?”

Huroi had the same answer as Regas, “We are clearing the fields with the people.”

“No, that isn’t it. The people...”

Lauel rushed over at that time. “Why were you so late?”



Lauel berated with a scruffy appearance as well. He also held farming equipment in his hands.

“You didn’t respond to my whispers, so I had to start the guild members on the urgent tasks. First of all, we are joining forces with the people to connect the waterways and plant the fields, so we will be able to produce simple food in a few months.”

Grid finally perceived reality. Then he desperately asked. “Where are the people?”

“Can’t you see them?” Lauel turned his gaze to the fields. Lauel’s finger was pointing to the people on the fields, the thin ones who Grid thought were slaves. “They are your people.”

“...Ah, why me?”

It was the moment when Grid’s expectations collapsed.

## CHAPTER 217

---

“Damn! What is this? I knew things were going too well!”

His fate changed after becoming Pagma’s Descendant. In the past, he lived an unlucky life. After becoming Pagma’s Descendant, most of the results were positive, no matter what hardship he went through. But why did he have to go through hardship everywhere he went? Did he have to accept it just because things worked out well?

Grid suppressed his anger. He looked around at all the people before asking, “Isn’t this the kingdom’s second largest city? Doesn’t that mean it’s rich? So why are the people in this state? Eh? Were they robbed by a group of thieves or something?”

“In the past, it was the richest city in the kingdom; however, everything changed 10 years ago when the giant worms appeared.”

“The giant worms? What do those monsters have to do with Reidan?”

Lauel explained to Grid, “This is what Faker found out after questioning the administrator and the people here.”

10 years ago. Reidan was the second largest city after Reinhardt and was called the second capital of the kingdom. However, this situation changed once the giant worms appeared on a large scale.

The giant worms ravaging the land were so strong that they couldn’t be subjugated with a regular army. They quickly turned the western part of the kingdom into a desert, leading to a shortage in resources and supplies, including water.

To make matters worse, all types of desert monsters started to appear. This situation got so bad that it Reidan was eventually isolated from the kingdom around it, falling into a food shortage.

“Large-scale support from the kingdom became impossible so the former lord of Reidan gave up. Hundreds of thousands of people were forced to leave their home.”

But some people didn’t leave. It was due to the circumstances of each people. 40,000 people remained behind in Reidan.

“They had to prioritize protecting the rivers and lakes that hadn’t been dried up yet. But with their strength, they couldn’t protect the rivers and lakes from monsters.”

King Wiesbaden tried to help by searching for talent to rebuild the west. However, there was no one good except for Earl Ashur, and Earl Ashur couldn’t leave Patrian.

“In the end, people were unable to get help from the kingdom and chose the empire. They asked the empire to be saved and the empire readily accepted. It was a chance to absorb part of the land of the Eternal Kingdom.”

The empire dispatched the Black Knights. The Black Knights were the second strongest knights after the Red Knights. But it was impossible for them to completely get rid of all the monsters in the west.

“At this point, the empire had to make a decision. In order to obtain the west, they would have to commit a large force. And that is a big burden from the position of the empire.”

Finally, the empire made a choice.

“They will protect the Hebed River directly connected to Reidan from the monsters. In return, the people of Reiden will have to make an offering to the empire every year. They offered that deal.”

“It is a reasonable proposal. The people of Reidan would’ve had to accept.”

“That’s right. But the problem was that the amount of wealth the empire asked for grew every year.”

Thanks to the protection of the empire, the people of Reidan were able to relieve the food shortage through farming. The economy was slowly revived, but so what? They became poor again after giving their wealth to the empire every year. Finally, there was a food crisis again.

“In the end, the people of Reidan reached the point where they couldn’t listen to the demands of the empire anymore. The empire withdrew their forces and as a result, there were only 20,000 people left in Reidan. They were on the brink of starvation. This was the situation when we arrived.”

Grid couldn’t believe it. “Why did the kingdom abandon Reidan? It might be

impossible to get rid of the monsters in the west, but isn't it possible to give them the minimum of supplies?"

"There was no merit. They didn't feel the value of helping the foolish people who won't abandon a land that can't be rebuilt."

It was cold but the right decision. At least, Grid thought so. "Yes, I understand the position of the kingdom. So in the end, aren't the people of the kingdom the real issue at hand? Why would they insist on staying in Reidan, in spite the circumstances? Isn't it a simple fix if they just leave?"

"It is unfortunate... 10 years ago, the lord recruited troops to raid the vampire lair. Most of the people who didn't leave Reidan are the families of the young men conscripted to the vampire raid."

"They don't know when their sons or husbands will return so they remained in Reidan?"

"That's right. As you know, this world is different from modern society and the reunion of separated families is almost impossible..."

10 years ago. The giant worms emerged soon after the vampire raid began. And Reidan fell in just five months. The vampire subjugation troops were scheduled to return in half a year, so the families of the soldiers had to wait until then.

They waited one year, two years, three years, four years, etc, but the vampire subjugation team didn't return. However, the family members kept staying in Reidan. The result was that 10 years passed. 40,000 people waited for the vampire subjugation team, but half of them gave up or starved to death.

"They have been waiting 10 years for the vampire subjugation team's return, despite the fact that the troops have probably been annihilated... Blood relationships are scary."

Grid thought that the people of Reiden were stupid, but he also felt compassion. It was because his family probably would've made the same choice if they were in the same position as the people of Reidan.

"The conclusion is that the former lord is a stupid jerk? Why did he try to clear the vampire lairs?"

“Until the giant worms appeared, the vampires were the only threat to Reidan. The vampire lairs are somewhere in the west and the vampires often used the people of Reidan as their food. The former lord made an unavoidable decision.”

Vampire Duke Marie Rose. Grid recalled the vampire that he met in the past on the way to the pope and shuddered.

“...Are the vampires still active these days?”

“No. Vampires haven’t appeared since monsters emerged in the west. Considering the strength of the vampires, they wouldn’t have been wiped out by the monsters. So it is possible that they turned the monsters into their food source.”

“That is lucky. Um... So? What should I do next?”

Lauel answered instantly as if it were obvious, “We need to focus on clearing the fields.”

“..”

In the nine days of Grid’s absence, the Overgeared members defeated the monsters around Hebend River and connected the waterways to the fields. Now it was a beautiful sight because they worked hard with the people to clear the fields.

“Labor is good. The sight of the people sweating while working is beautiful.” But Grid hated doing it. “I am the duke yet I have to work in the fields with the people? Isn’t this too much?”

Lauel shrugged at Grid’s obvious dislike.

“You don’t have to. You have a different workspace.”

Lauel received Grid’s command and brought Khan to this place. As soon as they got here, he gave support staff to Khan to build a facility. That’s right, it was a smithy.

“Please do your duties as a legendary blacksmith. There is a limit to the amount of farming equipment that can be produced by Khan alone. Please help him produce a large quantity of farming equipment.”

“What?”

A legendary blacksmith needed to make farmer's tools?

"Hey, what's with that look you're giving me?" Lael scolded Grid. "We need your strength to revive Reidan, and you want to refuse? Don't you feel any sense of responsibility as the Lord?"

Grid acquiesced and no longer complained loudly,

"...I was lacking in understanding."

'I became too arrogant after I became a duke.'

Only farming equipment? A blacksmith couldn't afford to have the word 'only' in their minds. Grid regained his pride as a blacksmith. In his mind, he threw away his futile bravado and rolled up his sleeves. Then he pulled out his blacksmith's hammer and declared, "Believe in me."

" ... "

Lael's face twisted as he heard the ominous words. But he thought about it and became relieved.

'In the first place, farming equipment with a rating other than normal doesn't exist, so I don't have to worry.'

Combat class users had no idea about production and production items. They weren't interested because there were few opportunities to use it. A hammer was just a hammer, a pickaxe was just a pickaxe, a hoe was just a hoe etc. Moreover, most of the production items distributed had a normal rating.

Blacksmiths aimed for mass production so it was less likely for a production class item to have a high-rating. But who was Grid? He always invested at least 20 hours, no matter what item he was making, and had already produced a legendary rated hammer and pickaxe.

"Then I'm going. I'll go to work."

He would produce the best farming equipment that could be used easily, even by those who were starving and had no strength! Grid pledged as he entered the city.

Lauel shouted after him. “By the way Grid, who are these two people?”

“Ah.” Grid was reminded of Piaro and Bland and told the two people. “This is what happened, so I’ll have to stay in the smithy for a while. In the meantime, you will be bored. Right? Shouldn’t you move your body to avoid being bored? Right?”

“If I look around the city and train Bland some more, I won’t be bored.”

Piaro gave his opinion. But Grid responded like he didn’t hear.

“I will tell you how to relieve your boredom.”

Grid’s finger pointed to the fields.

Piaro and Bland were always in the best position because of their noble family and their natural talents, so they couldn’t grasp Grid’s intentions at first. They never imagined that there would be a person who assigned them to work in the fields.

“Help me clear the fields. Please.”

“W-What?”

Bland was astonished. He was an elite of the kingdom with the best bloodline flowing through him! A cornerstone of the kingdom was made to do field work?

No, he could understand since he was a hostage. But wasn’t Piaro a former captain of a troop of knights, and also one of the best swordsmen on the continent? Despite his great achievements, he was still forced to work in the fields?

Bland thought that Grid was crazy. But what was this?

“Physical training is good to increase the body’s stamina. Moreover, since I’ve never had experience working in the field, it is an opportunity to develop muscles I haven’t used very well or to experience new movements. I understand.”

Piaro readily accepted? Great Swordsman. The one closest to becoming a sword saint positively evaluated the field work and started stretching, so Bland fell silent and also started loosening up his body.

“Are you really working in the fields?”

Grid was surprised. He hadn't expected Piaro to accept his request.

"Why so easily?"

Piaro saw Grid's confused face and said. "I have regained my motivation after being with you and Bland for the past nine days. I don't want revenge to be my whole life. You will get revenge for me sooner or later, so I have to shake off the past and try to live in the future. I'm not a noble anymore, so it is a good idea to learn about the lives of the common people in advance."

"...Thank you."

Grid bowed respectfully to him not only to thank him for his help in the fields but also for his willingness to live.

'A person like that was affected by me...'

Grid had enough influence to change someone's life. He realized this thanks to Piaro and thought deeply.

'A lord is a person who rules over tens of thousands of people. He was also a guild master who led the Overgeared members. He should never forget. My thoughts and actions can change the fate of a large number of people.'

Grid vowed to become more mature every time he experienced certain events. However, he couldn't abandon his inherent nature and was prone to losing his prudence whenever he was in a hurry. So he thought that he should manage himself more thoroughly.

He left Winston for the west. This was the moment that Grid's heart once again grew in response to Piaro's words.



## CHAPTER 218

---

“Lauel, Piaro, and Bland will help in the fields while I am in the smithy. Thank them for their help.”

“No, who are they?”

Lauel wanted Grid to introduce the two men. But rather than introducing them, Grid spoke to the two men and asked them to work. Lauel thought it was absurd.

“Then I’m going.”

“Grid!”

Lauel called again, but Grid didn’t look back and left. It was because it wouldn’t be fun to reveal Piaro’s identity immediately.

‘He will experience it directly. He will feel astonishment, admiration, and reverence. There are only a few name-grade NPCs in Satisfy.’

Grid imagined Lauel and the Overgeared members’ reactions after grasping Piaro’s identity as a great swordsman. Piaro would teach the Overgeared members and they would become more powerful.



‘So insensitive.’

Lauel faced Piaro and Bland after Grid left. He started awkwardly for a moment before observing the two people. He looked at the middle-aged Piaro standing next to Bland. Piaro was wearing dirty clothes that couldn’t even be used as rags, and a horrible stench came from him.

‘He was called Bland so he must be Earl Ashur’s son...’ Lauel easily understood Bland’s identity, but the problem was Piaro. ‘Who is this person? His physique is good but his condition is too bad.’

Grid had mentioned that he was accompanied by someone when he took Earl Ashur’s

son as a hostage. However, he didn't say who it was.

'Disappointing.'

Lauel hoped that Grid would bring someone with enormous talent to help, but did he just bring a slave over?

'He wasted nine days to bring someone like this here...'

Lauel was deeply disappointed. He wanted to make Grid aware of his position. Then he smiled. Lauel didn't let his inner emotions show as he greeted the two people.

"I am Lauel, Grid's chief of staff. I'm proficient in handling people. Can I hear your introductions?"

Lauel was active in the golem invasion and grew further on his way to the west, so he was now level 287. He was first in the qigong master rankings, but he introduced himself as 'proficient in handling people.'

"I am Bland de Ian, the youngest son of Earl Ashur. I know a bit of magic and have some skill in the sword."

He had poor magic ability compared to his father. In addition, his swordsmanship was at a baby's level compared to Grid and Piaro. Therefore, Bland introduced himself as a beginner despite having a high level.

Piario was even worse, "I am Piario. I have nothing to introduce other than my name. I know how to use the sword, but I am still lacking."

He hadn't achieved the level of a sword saint yet, and thus, Piario introduced himself as an average swordsman.

'There is a reason why Grid gave them field work: they just aren't useful anywhere else.'

Lauel had no expectations of Piario and Bland's fighting power.

'Well, a beggar is better than a freeloader.'

He wasn't very inspired, but Lauel nodded and handed rakes to the two men.

“Use this to get rid of foreign matter in the ground such as stones, then prepare the land for planting seeds.”

Lauel was sure that they wouldn't do the work properly. Bland was a noble and wouldn't want to work hard in the fields, while the slave Piaro was probably just hoping for a meal.

“Um, this is the farming equipment used by the common people.”

“I never thought that I would hold a tool like this in my entire life.”

“This is also an experience.”

“I will keep that in mind.”

Piaro and Bland talked amongst themselves, but Lauel showed no interest in their conversation. Lauel pointed to the vast land as they marvelled over the rakes.

“Clear this piece of land by the end of the day. If you don't know how to do it, please ask the people nearby. If you can't do it, then take a break. I don't intend to force you to work.”

Most of the 20,551 people of Reiden were engaged in clearing the wilderness. It was safe to assume that all those with the physical strength, regardless of age and sex, were working. But the efficiency fell too much, due to the lack of farming equipment.

Putting together the farming equipment owned by the people and the ones currently produced by Khan, there was only around 3,000 tools. It meant that among the thousands of people working, only 3,000 were actually efficient. The rest of the people could only pick up the stones by hand.

In this situation, Lauel wasn't certain that he should give the tools to Bland and Piaro. He deliberately gave an absurd quota to Piaro and Bland. He wanted them to give up quickly so that the precious farming equipment wasn't wasted.

‘I gave them 10 times more work than the others, so they will give up quickly.’

Lauel left the two people and got to work.

“Dragon Claws.”

Once Lauel used his skill, five sharp pillars rose from the ground before disappearing. Then around 50 pyeong of land was overturned at once (1 pyeong= around 32 square feet). Lauel scraped all the foreign matter that emerged from the ground with the rake, before laying down the ground again.

“This is enough.”

Lauel was pleased. Clearing 50 pyeong in an instant. He immediately moved to another place and repeated the same thing. He was doing the job of hundreds alone. Bland watched him silently before exclaiming.

“Magic can be applied to clear the land quickly. I should give it a try.”

Bland was about to use magic when Piaro restrained him.

“Why use magic for something that doesn’t need it? Do you want to miss this golden opportunity to do physical exercise?”

Bland realized his mistake and said, “I was too short-sighted.”

“Look over there.” Piaro pointed to the people working hard and sweating. “We must learn from them. New movements will be acquired and this will nourish your swordsmanship.

“Yes.”

Piaro and Bland started to observe the common people. They thoroughly grasped how to clear the ground. After a while.

“How about it? Isn’t this training?”

“That’s right. It places a severe burden on the waist, shoulders and knees. This was the first time my body has been so overworked.”

This wasn’t exercise but labor. It was new for Piaro and Bland, who were nobles. They repeatedly moved their rakes with their disciplined bodies. It was an incredibly fast speed. Both of them had good physical skills and picked up the tricks from the ordinary people, so they finished Lauel’s ridiculous quota in just one and a half hours.

“Lauel.”

‘They are finally here.’

Lauel had been working hard using his skill and rake, so he was satisfied when he heard Piaro’s voice,

“Was it tough? You must’ve suffered a lot. Then, go rest. Oh, please return the rakes as well.”

Piaro spoke to Lauel who didn’t look back at him,

“Why should we rest? I am here to report that we have finished our work. Is there anything more we can do?”

“...Huh?”

Lauel doubted his ears and turned towards Piaro. Piaro was now completely covered in dirt. It was proof that he had been working hard. But clearing a 500 pyeong sized land in just two hours?

Lauel couldn’t believe it as he asked,

“If you don’t mind, can I go and check it myself?”

“Yes.”

Piaro wasn’t offended. It was natural since this was the first time he did it.

“Heok.”

The usually calm Lauel let out a cry of surprise. The 500 pyeong sized land that he entrusted to both Piaro and Bland really had been cleared.

‘What type of magic was used?’

Lauel couldn’t close his mouth and Piaro prompted him, “Then, please give us the next task.”

“Ah, yes...”

There was a lot of wilderness that needed to be cleared. Lauel entrusted Piaro and

Bland with another piece of land that was 500 pyeong. Then he watched both of them.

*Buzz buzz.*

The other Overgeared members quickly gathered in Lauel's vicinity, all interested in the turmoil. They folded their arms and watched Bland and Piaro. The person who started work first was Bland.

"Ohh."

"Isn't he quite good?"

The Overgeared members let out sounds of admiration. Bland cleared the field 10 times faster than an average person, a speed comparable to when the Overgeared members used their skills. The Overgeared members were able to predict that Bland's strength and stamina were comparable to theirs.

Then what about the other person? The Overgeared members focused on Piaro, who belatedly started after sufficient stretching. Then they were shocked.

"W-What?"

"A professional farmer...!"

The speed at which Piaro cleared the field was 10 times faster than Bland. It wasn't just a matter of good stamina. He had a perfect grasp of how to use the rake to overturn the ground more effectively. His exquisite movements made the rake move through the ground like it was water. It was a godly skill that allowed all the foreign substances in the ground to be piled up in a corner.

"Hah...! Grid brought someone huge!"

"Yes. He brought a master of farming. With those skills, he is almost like a legendary farmer. We can't be fooled by his appearance..."

"But how did Grid know that we needed a farmer for Reidan?"

"This Huroi! I am impressed with My Lord's foresight!"

At that moment.

“Hmm?”

Piaro’s transcendent senses detected the flow of water deep in the earth. He asked Lauel, “Does this place not have enough water connected to it right now?”

“That’s right. We plan to connect more channels in the future.”

“I’ll take care of it.”

“...?”

No matter how clever Lauel was, he couldn’t immediately understand Piaro’s remark. Lauel and the Overgeared members were feeling puzzled as Piaro pushed his rake deep into the ground. Suddenly, the earth started to shake as an intangible wave of energy was released.

“An earthquake all of a sudden...!”

Lauel and the Overgeared members thought that a giant worm might pop up, while the residents were confused.

At that moment.

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

A sound echoed out from where Piaro was standing before a pillar of water exploded upwards, seemingly piercing the sky.

“Wahhhh!”

The people cheered at the unbelievable sight while Lauel and the Overgeared members were shocked. There was the gurgle of water as Piaro wiped the water and dirt off his face before saying,

“This is a good plot of land.”

“...”

Piaro was clever and talented, so he was the best at whatever he did. It was the moment when the great swordsman became known as a legendary farmer and

legendary feng shui person. On this day, there was a festive atmosphere in Reidan. A precious source of water had been found in the land that had been turned into a wilderness, so the people laughed, cried, and wept.

At the same time.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

“How sad, I can’t even rest and have to work immediately after being overworked in a week-long monster hunt...”

Grid, Duke of the Eternal Kingdom and Lord of Reidan, was fiercely hammering in front of the roaring blast furnace. His rank was the highest, but he was also the busiest.

This was normal.



## CHAPTER 219

---

“Khan!”

Three hours before Piaro was misunderstood as a legendary farmer and feng shui expert.

Grid came to the smithy where Khan was working alone.

“Ohh! You came!”

“I missed you!”

“I haven’t been able to eat, because I wanted to see you!”

“Eh? Should I have missed meals as well?”

“Hahaha!”

Grid and Khan hugged as they reunited after a long time. It was a friendship that transcended identity and age, so they welcomed each other enthusiastically.

“I was worried that you wouldn’t be able to adapt to the warm weather of the west, but you seem fine. Rather, you look healthier.”

Khan was in the latter half of his 60’s. He had passed the average life expectancy of the people of the Eternal Kingdom, so it was safe to say that he was at the end of his life. But after returning to being a blacksmith thanks to Grid, Khan worked all day and looked like he was in his 40’s or 50’s.

“You don’t have to worry. I have been working with fire all my life, so how can I be threatened by this heat?”

“You’re a great inspiration.”

Grid smiled. However, he knew that the lifespan of an NPC was finite so he couldn’t suppress the uneasiness in his life.

‘Please live for a long time.’

The first friend in his life, Khan. Grid wouldn’t be able to bear the sadness that would come when he needed to say farewell to the person who opened up his heart. Khan noticed the sad emotions in Grid’s smile and became slightly teary.

‘He reminds me of my son.’

His late son. If he hadn’t become sick and died early, he would’ve been Duke Grid’s age right now.

‘Originally, my son should be the one worrying about me...’

He wanted to see his son. But he could appease that longing with Duke Grid beside him. Khan was thankful for Duke Grid filling his vacancy. Khan swallowed back his tears and bowed his head.

“Thank you.”

“Huh? What?”

Grid didn’t understand the intentions behind Khan’s sudden action. Khan smiled at his puzzled expression.

“Didn’t you come here to help me? So I wanted to thank you! Hahaha!”

“What...? This is originally my work.” Grid brought Khan to Reidan so that Khan wouldn’t be lonely, not for the manpower. “But the situation of the city is a little inconvenient right now, so I am grateful for your help. Let’s work together to solve the problem.”

Grid took off the Holy Light set and changed into old clothing. The dirty novice clothing was what Grid wore when he worked as a blacksmith. The efficiency increased because it was easy to move in the clothing. The only downside was that Grid looked like a complete beggar when he wore it.

“Ohh! You can’t hide your dignity with these shabby clothes!”

Grid’s current dignity and charm stats were comparable to the king of a kingdom, so he was always brimming with elegance.

Grid swept away his hair and revealed his great forehead. He tied a cloth around his head so that his hair wouldn't flow down, and looked around the smithy.

'It is unbelievably large.'

A general smithy only had one or two small or medium sized furnaces installed. Usually only three to five people could work at the same time in a smithy.

However, the Overgeared members looked at the future and invested in Reidan's smithy, giving it a total of eight large furnaces. The sight of eight large furnaces lined up in a row was impressive.

'Isn't this at the level of a factory? Dozens of blacksmiths can work at the same time and produce a large quantity of items.'

But that was a story for later, when they had many blacksmiths. Currently, there was only Grid and Khan, so the big size of the smithy couldn't be taken advantage of.

'I should look into inviting blacksmith users.'

Grid looked at the smithy before deciding to start working. However, he didn't have the method to make a rake.

'I don't know how to make any farming equipment.'

It was because he never needed to make farming equipment before. But that wasn't a problem. Grid had the Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal skill. Grid held one of the rakes made by Khan and used appraisal.

[Sturdy Rake]

Rating: Normal

Durability: 20/20 Attack Power: 3~7

A farming equipment suitable for digging at the ground.

It is made by Blacksmith Khan who can represent a region, so it is a rake with excellent durability.

Weight: 60

[A hidden function doesn't exist.]

[You have grasped the materials that make up Sturdy Rake, the production method, and the intentions of its creator.]

[Your understanding of the Sturdy Rake is now at 100%. You will be able to use the Sturdy Rake perfectly.]

[You have learned how to make a rake.]

The rake production method was added. Grid was satisfied and started work.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

He bent the structure at the end to resemble a trident. It was a simple structure, so Khan was able to produce one rake in just 20 minutes. Yet Grid was different. Just like when raiding boss monsters, Grid was extremely focused as he devoted himself to making one rake.

He carefully shaped the ends like he was making a sword, then he combined it with the handle part. Grid had over 2,000 dexterity, so his hands delicately handled the rake like he was touching Irene's pale body.

Two hours later.

"Ah, I should take a rest."

Age didn't lie. The weary Khan stopped working. On the other hand, Grid had superhuman stamina and wasn't exhausted. Khan looked closely at his work and was shocked.

"No, what are you doing right now?"

"Huh? What's the problem?"

Grid looked like he didn't understand, so Khan asked.

"Why are you spending two hours making a rake? I've already finished six rakes in two hours... Isn't this a waste of time?"

“Hrmm.” Grid identified the six rakes made by Khan. Of course, they were all normal rated. The degree of completion wasn’t satisfactory, considering Khan’s skill. “Khan.”

Grid stared straight at Khan. Khan flinched at the sight. Grid’s eyes were as deep as the ocean, like a wise man. It was quite different from the usual Grid.

‘Grid can also look like this...!’

Then Grid asked the astounded Khan. “Shouldn’t you always do your best when making equipment? So why are you roughly making the farming equipment?”

“That... Produce as much as possible. Lauel said to mass produce as much farming equipment as possible so that he could put more manpower into the rehabilitation project.”

“Mass production? Even lowly blacksmiths can do something like that.”

Grid emanated a huge pressure. Right now, he wasn’t a greedy young man or Khan’s valued friend. There was no doubt that he was a legendary blacksmith, Pagma’s Descendant.

“Your role isn’t to produce average farming equipment for ordinary farmers.”

“Then what is my role?”

Grid replied firmly to Khan’s question. “It’s to make the best farming equipment that will help ordinary farmers become the best. That is your mission as an advanced blacksmith. Please don’t forget your pride as an advanced blacksmith, no matter the situation.”

“Ah...!”

Khan had worked with Grid for a long time and accumulated experience. Thanks to the skill Blacksmith’s Affection, his blacksmithing skill reached advanced level 7. He was one of the best blacksmiths that currently existed, and he realized the truth of Grid’s words.

“You’re absolutely right!”

Khan was highly motivated. Grid handed the rake that he’d just completed to Khan.

“Look at what I created.”

“Truly brilliant...!”

[Ideal Rake]

Rating: Epic

Durability: 50/50 Attack Power: 25~31

\* Stamina +7.

\* Dexterity +12.

\* It will slightly improve the quality of the soil.

A farming equipment suitable for digging at the ground.

An item made by the blacksmith ‘G’ who has a reputation close to a legend. Despite the use of bad quality iron and wood as the material, its function is outstanding.

The three delicate prongs will make the soil finer, improving soil quality.

Weight: 51

‘The one rake that Grid made in two hours is much more valuable than the six rakes that I made!’

He also wanted to make a good rake. Khan pledged before standing in front of the furnace again.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

“Don’t overdo it.”

Grid was concerned about Khan’s health, but the highly concentrated Khan could no longer hear his voice.

‘Yes, this is like him.’

Grid smiled warmly before starting to make his second rake.

Two hours later.

Grid and Khan both completed a rare rated rake. But once again, two hours later...

“Yes! It can’t be compared to your work, but I have also produced a satisfactory rake!”

Khan succeeded in making an epic rated rake. The performance was less than Grid’s, but it was clearly an excellent rake. Indeed, this was the dignity of an Advanced Blacksmith level 7. Then what about Grid?

“Damn...”

It was a normal rating. Grid was embarrassed. He didn’t know that a normal rating would emerge when he was making such a simple item.

“Are you trying to deceive me with a rake?”

Grid’s pride as a legendary blacksmith was once again wounded. Once again, two hours later. Grid and Khan both completed a rare rated rake.

“Not bad.”

Khan was happy. But Grid was boiling with anger.

“Ugh, dammit...!”

A legendary blacksmith was having such a hard time making farming equipment? This wasn’t normal.

“Are you tricking me again? These damn scum!”

Grid yelled at the operators who were watching from somewhere. Then Khan sent him a pitiful look.

“It has been a long time since I’ve seen this...”

It was a frequent phenomenon when they worked together. Khan left Grid shouting alone and started making a new rake.

“Grid!”

Now it was time for dinner. Lael finished today's work and ran to the smithy.

"Let's go eat. Then we need to consult with the guild about the estate management plans... Eh?"

Lael's expressions twisted. He wondered how much Grid and Khan would've made in half a day, but there was less than 20 tools.

"Surely you weren't playing around?"

Lael expected a legendary blacksmith to work like a machine. He was feeling disappointed when Grid threw him a rake.

"I wasn't playing around. Look at this."

"...?"

Why did he need to look at the details of a rake? Lael felt doubts and examined the rake.

"Heok."

Lael was beyond shocked.

[Perfect Rake]

Rating: Unique

Durability: 71/71 Attack Power: 49~61

\* Stamina +15

\* Dexterity +28

\* Greatly improves the soil quality.

A farming equipment suitable for digging at the ground.

An item made by the blacksmith 'G' who has a reputation close to a legend. Despite the use of bad quality iron and wood as the material, its function is outstanding.

The three delicate prongs will make the soil finer, improving soil quality. The three



prongs are bent at the ideal angle to work the soil. Even a child can use this rake to turn a wasteland into an excellent garden.

Weight: 45

The rake was a tool that helped adult males clear a 1,000 pyeong size land in one day. However, the people of Reidan were starving for a long time and their physical condition wasn't good, so each person could only clear 100 pyeong a day.

'The people of Reidan will be able to do more than that if they have this rake. The soil improvement means that the land will give a good harvest.'

This game was truly about items. Grid was the truth. Lael once again thought that it was a good idea to follow Grid. He didn't doubt that one day, the people of Reidan would be armed with the power of items.

Then he suddenly got an ominous feeling.

'Don't tell me that when he becomes a king...'

Surely he wouldn't name it Overgeared Kingdom? Lael made a tearful face.

## CHAPTER 220

---

The central spire of Reidan Castle was a huge 11 stories. It was nearly twice as high as the spire of the lord's castle in common cities.

"Is the height of the central spire important?"

"In a sense, it symbolizes the power of the lord. The greater the prestige and power of the lord, the higher the height of the spires."

"In other words, the former lord of Reidan enjoyed the same authority as the king."

"That is the correct interpretation."

In fact, the size of Reidan Castle was comparable to the king's palace.

"The castle has a total of 127 rooms. In addition, there are six other outbuildings. There are five gardens, three parade grounds, and a barracks that can accommodate 8,000 troops."

There were no small decorations or basic furniture left. It was left untouched for a long time, so there were many rusty places and it was desolate. But the form itself was completely preserved, so Grid was amazed.

"It's surprising. I thought the castle would be completely ruined like the city."

"The people of Reidan sacrificed themselves to protect it."

The days when the empire defended the Heibend River. The people of Reidan had to give a certain amount as tribute to the empire, and it came to the point where they had to dismantle the city's buildings. However, they couldn't touch the castle, which was the symbol of Reiden, and their last remaining pride. As a result, the entire scenery around Reidan Castle was a ruin.

Grid was deeply impressed by Lael's explanation.

'The people of Reidan might be dying of starvation, but they protected their pride...'

Grid was a selfish person, but at least he had patriotism. It was the result of the forceful education during military service. Thanks to that, he was able to understand the hearts of the Reidan people without laughing at them.

‘The people really love the place where they grew up.’ Grid had a positive observation.

“It will be a big help to me to save the people of Reidan. Then the people of Reidan will be loyal and follow any orders. Isn’t that right? Lael.”

Lael was impressed. “I can’t believe you thought that deeply.”

Anyone could think about it. But he thought that Grid couldn’t.

Grid spoke to the astonished Lael. “Don’t exploit the people or give unreasonable commands.”

“...Yes?”

Lael was shocked. He was more surprised than when he observed the unique rated rake several hours ago.

‘What’s wrong?’

Wasn’t Grid the type of person to use others for his own sake? It was unbelievable to Lael that he would make such a statement about the people. He was at a loss when Grid whispered to him.

“I am the lord of the people, so I can’t act childish. Just do it properly.”

The people were the cash flow. Grid still thought so. He wanted to do the minimum amount to protect them. This was the least he could do for the people who sacrificed themselves to protect the symbol of the lord.

“In the first place, people must live here. Isn’t that right?”

Grid was the lord of Reidan and leader of the Overgeared Guild, so he decided to act in a manner that wouldn’t shame them. Now he was trying to act according to that determination. Lael smiled with satisfaction at Grid’s growth.

“I will keep it in mind.”

“I know.”

Grid went ahead. After a few hours, he grasped the structure of the castle.

“It’s really big. This great castle is mine?”

“It isn’t just this castle. You’re the master of everything in Reidan. In addition, you’re eligible to get your hands on something greater. The spires of Reidan will become higher than the royal palace.” Huroi remarked as he appeared.

Grid smiled. “Welcome Huroi. Your words always make me feel better. Thank you.”

Thank you? Huroi was baffled. The original Grid wasn’t someone who would express appreciation for anything.

‘Reciprocating the goodwill of others...’

The selfish Grid was starting to fill up his lacking spots. It was gratifying. He noticed things that weren’t pointed out.

‘He grows every time I see him.’

Huroi and Lauel were impressed.

*Thump thump.*

Grid moved to the great hall that could accommodate around 500 people. Apart from the old throne, it was just a room full of dust. However, Grid didn’t doubt that this would soon shine a brilliant gold. He sat on the throne and quietly closed his eyes.

“Now it feels real.”

He was a duke of the Eternal Kingdom. Next to the king, he had the highest status and held the greatest power in his hand. He represented Huroi, Lauel, Jishuka and the other Overgeared members.

But.

‘Am I qualified?’

Many memories went through Grid's mind. At a young age, he learned to be anxious around others. As an adolescent, he had many limitations. In his 20's, he experienced a lot of frustration. Hardships came to mind.

His memories before Satisfy were the worst. But everything changed after he started Satisfy and became Pagma's Descendant. He used the abilities he obtained to overcome his limitations, as well as the trials that he received.

'Is this purely the result of good luck?'

Grid wondered. After a long moment of thinking, he came up with an answer.

'No.'

There was a lot of luck, but in the end, it was his own strength and efforts that led to this result. It was unclear if the Northern End Cave even existed, but he had found it after several months of exploration.

'I am qualified. I was able to climb up to this point because I'm qualified.'

*Sururuk.*

Grid was filled with joyful emotions and slowly opened his eyes. Was this the influence of his higher charm stat? Or was it the effect of the true pride that he realized at this moment? Grid's eyes were deeper than ever, like the sea.

"Huroi, Lauel."

"Yes."

Grid called out and Huroi bowed with a sincere heart. Lauel followed as well. The two of them prostrated before him. It was a common action. Grid didn't feel awkward because of their exaggerated behavior.

"Both of you said that I'm destined to be the best. Was that false or exaggerated?"

Huroi and Lauel responded in unshakable voices.

"My Lord is already the best."

“You are the only person I acknowledge. So you are a qualified person.”

They were sincere. Grid’s power, stats and abilities were among the top out of the two billion users in Satisfy. The only flaw was that he was lacking financial power, but he could overcome it if Reidan developed.

Defects in personality and intelligence? Grid was developing, so that wasn’t a problem.

“...Yes, I will believe you and take pride in myself.”

At this moment, Grid developed some self-pride. This was pure pride, not arrogance or egotism.

“Sigh...”

He let out a deep exhale. The victim mentality and inferiority complex was deeply rooted because of his experiences in the past. He hadn’t fully shed it yet, but this was the moment his heart cleared. His jealousy towards others disappeared. His heart was light. His head became clear and his vision widened.

“This feels much better.”

Grid said with a bright smile.

Now he was reaching the end of his steady internal growth process.



Reidan was a very large city that could accommodate 430,000 people, but it was currently impossible to increase the population. It was because Reidan didn’t have any charms to attract people from other parts of the world to it.

Lauel believed that they should make good use of the 20,551 people currently living in Reidan.

“We have addressed the food shortage. The pace of the farmland clearing has increased exponentially thanks to the discovery of water by Piaro, the legendary farmer and feng shui expert. It’s easy to spread drinking water.”

‘Legendary farmer? Feng shui expert?’

Grid and the Overgeared members were in the meeting room. How did Piaro become a legendary farmer and feng shui expert? Grid questioned this while Lael laid out policies for the future.

Developing agriculture would encourage the birth of the people, promote consumption and attract external resources. In addition, there was a plan to grow the smithy on a large scale, centering on Grid and Khan. This would build up a foothold to become a commercial city.

“At this time, the role of the Overgeared members is to subjugate the monsters. We need to reduce the power of the monsters occupying the west. In particular, the ultimate goal is to destroy all the giant worms.”

As with most online games, Satisfy’s monsters respawned after a certain period of time from their deaths. But monsters that caused certain episodes, such as the giant worms, were in the special category.

“There is probably the home of the giant worms somewhere underground. If we find and destroy it, I’m sure that the giant worms will no longer respawn.”

The giant worms had to be destroyed. Then the west could develop and the episode would move to the next stage. Lael’s words stirred the enthusiasm of the Overgeared members.

“Levels are guaranteed.”

“Yes. The monsters in the west give a lot of experience.”

“In return, they are too strong.”

“We have the power of our items. Have you forgotten? We fortunately have Grid.”

“Lael, are there no longer any villages or cities in the west where people live? If it’s possible to find a place where people are still living, can’t we bring them to Reidan to increase the population?”

This was the opinion of Toban, the former chief of staff of the Tzedakah Guild. The Overgeared members responded positively to his words, but Lael expressed concern.

“For the time being, I don’t plan to search for other villages or cities. We should ignore

the cities and villages found in the middle of the desert. There is likely to be a vampire lair.”

Vampires had a minimum level of 250. However, this was the case of the young vampires. Vampires who lived for over 300 years were likely to have levels over 400. The possibility of being wiped out was high if they stepped into a vampire lair, so Lael wanted to avoid such a situation.

Grid rose from his seat.

“I’ll go now. There’s a mountain of work piled up in the smithy.”

Grid’s word was far from being a lord. In fact, Lael was taking the role of the lord while Grid acted like a blacksmith. At first glance, the situations should be reversed, but this was actually right.

Grid wasn’t smart enough to lead a big city. It was Grid himself who appointed Lael to this role.

After that.

The Overgeared members were able to level up and secure resources by hunting the monsters. The desertification of Reidan meant that timber was lacking, so securing timber was the first priority.

Piaro and Bland immersed themselves in farming with the people, while Jude was tasked with training the strong people who Grid discovered through the Great Lord’s Sword.

“Jump. Roll. Gear up. Spear...? Stab and swing your spear.”

Jude’s reckless training caused many soldiers to leave. However, a handful endured and were gradually reborn into elite soldiers. Unfortunately, their Weapons Mastery skill didn’t grow, but the speed of their strength and stamina rise was abnormally fast.

“Anyway, my soldiers don’t need a high Weapons Mastery skill.”

Grid made weapons with low usage conditions and high attack power and spread them to the soldiers. Even the farm equipment was powerful, so the soldiers armed with his items were different from other soldiers in the region.



*Ttang! Ttang!*

Grid worked in the smithy around the clock. He was now working on construction tools instead of farming tools. Agriculture was stable now, so they were focusing on constructing facilities with the resources secured by the Overgeared members.

‘I feel like I’m dying, but my persistence and dexterity stats are rapidly growing.’

Grid wasn’t bored. Obtaining a different outcome every time from his production work was a different type of fun from hunting and boss raids. In any case, he was a blacksmith and needed to do it for the rest of his life.

‘Irene will like it.’

His dexterity stat kept rising, so he would be able to make Irene even happier. Grid laughed while thinking about it.

On the other hand, Khan was busy nurturing young blacksmiths.

“Hey! That forging quality isn’t great! Hey! If you put the firewood in now, your control of the fire will fall!”

Khan’s voice seemed to become more vigorous as the days passed. Khan’s passion made Grid smile.

Then after a while.

“It’s been a long time.”

Rabbit finally arrived.

## CHAPTER 221

---

Rabbit was from a rural part of the country, but his genius and talent caused him to rise to the top of the Mero Company. In the past, he was the first to recognize that the level 21 Grid had a huge talent and suggested a partnership.

“This commoner, Rabbit, greets the great hero, Duke Grid.”

Rabbit hadn’t changed since the first day they met. He wore thin-rimmed glasses and gave off the impression of a cultured gentleman. There were no signs of greed in his eyes, but he looked more like a saint than a merchant.

But what was the truth? Unlike his appearance, Rabbit was as greedy as Grid. That’s how he was able to succeed as a merchant.

‘A true charlatan gives a sense of confidence to the other person.’

Grid grinned with satisfaction and greeted Rabbit. “You must’ve had a hard time. Isn’t it nice to see people after being stuck in prison for a long time?”

“Thanks to the people of Winston treating me as a hero, Marquis Steim gave me many conveniences.”

“That’s good. I’m relieved to see that you’re healthy. It’s nice to meet you again.”

“ ... ”

Rabbit’s insight detected the changes in Grid. His gestures, expressions, speech, etc. From head to toe, everything about the current Grid was completely different from the Grid of the past. It wasn’t a simple change, so Rabbit felt a thrill.

“I underestimated you.”

The future that Rabbit saw for Grid was the best blacksmith and the richest person. But the current Grid was...

“You are pursuing the path of rising to the top, where everyone will look up at you.”

It was heartfelt appreciation. The Grid from a while ago would've overreacted. But now Grid combined reality and humility.

"It's a challenge. I'm lacking a lot, so I need your help. Will you serve me?"

Rabbit bowed. Then he answered formally, showing his loyalty with honest words.

"Duke Grid, I don't doubt that you are the one who will make me the richest man on the continent. So I'm willing to follow you."

Grid also responded honestly. "Not the richest person on the continent. I will be the richest person."

"Haha, then I will just dream of being rich."

"So be it."

Grid smiled as he pulled out the Great Lord's Sword and laid it on Rabbit's shoulder. It wasn't a problem that this was a smithy instead of a palace. Rather, it was more meaningful because a smithy was the place where Grid's identity was established.

"From this moment on, you will be a viscount of the Eternal Kingdom. But you need only be loyal to me."

When Marquis Steim was still an earl, he had appointed Grid as a viscount, despite Grid being a commoner. As a duke, Grid also had the authority to arbitrarily give someone a title. But he had no plans to abuse Rabbit, as he planned to give Rabbit a monthly salary that suited his title.

He could sell titles to users, but Lauel had dissuaded him from doing this.

"Both I and my descendants will be faithful only to My Lord."

A notification window popped up the moment Rabbit made the oath.

[You have used your authority as a duke to appoint 'Rabbit' as a viscount.]

[You have an obligation to give Rabbit a monthly salary of 500 gold every month. Rabbit's loyalty will fall if you don't pay this salary.]

Delight appeared on Grid's face.

'As I expected, he's a named NPC.'

Name: Rabbit

Age: 37 Gender: Male

Occupation: Merchant/ Viscount of the Eternal Kingdom

Title: Wealthy Merchant

\* The best merchant of this era. He has the ability to create demand even for simple stones.

Level: 307

Strength: 49 Stamina: 380

Agility: 150 Intelligence: 2,241

Political Power: 1,505 Insight: 1,533

Leadership: 512 Charm: 210

Skills: Composure (A+), Detection (A+), Administration (S), Business Acumen (S+), Wisdom of a Great Merchant (SS).

Born in Winston, in the northern part of the kingdom. He was born a commoner, but he devoted himself to his studies. After proving that he had talent, he received a sponsorship to the Central Academy and graduated as the best student.

He served as a royal administrator, but received unfair treatment due to his commoner status. Therefore, he became a merchant and made the best achievements.

Due to his poor childhood, he has a tendency to cling to money.

### [Composure (A+)]

No matter what situation he faces, he won't lose his composure. It's rare for him to make mistakes because his brain is active at all times.

### [Detection (A+)]

Can see the essence of humans and objects. He can easily communicate with anyone and always gets the best results.

### [Administration (S)]

If he belongs to a certain power, the ability to manage the affairs is excellent. It is at a level that can develop a small village into a city.

### [Business Acumen (S+)]

The trading ability has reached the highest level. Even a piece of garbage can be made into a product.

### [Wisdom of a Great Merchant (SS)]

The experience and know how of someone who made a large company.

### 'S-grade Administration...'

The speed of development of a city was proportional to the grade of the administrator. The role of an administrator was very important, but it wasn't an easy task to find one with a high rating. Winston was the second largest city in the north, and even Administrator Valdi only had a B-grade. Then how fast would a place grow with a S-grade administrator? He didn't dare imagine it.

### 'His ability as a merchant is S+ and SS...'

Rabbit even had the ability to make goods out of rubbish. Based on the description, it

was a complete scam. Grid was confused.

‘How should I handle him?’

Should Rabbit serve as an administrator, or work as a merchant? Rabbit spoke while he couldn’t make a decision.

“Before I came to see you, I looked over Reidan. It’s good that you are clearing the fields and connecting waterways, but I feel like it’s too much.”

“Too much?”

“Doesn’t Reidan only have a population of 20,000? If the number of fields are reduced by a third, it will be enough to feed the people.”

Grid explained the situation. “Once the clearing of the fields is done, we plan to expand farming and build this up as an agricultural city. This will be the basis to become a commercial city.”

“It’s the wrong choice. Due to the hot climate of Reidan, only a limited number of crops can be grown. Reidan isn’t suitable as an agricultural city.”

“There are no problems with the species restrictions. In the first place, we were planning to concentrate and export the crops that can be harvested quickly.”

Lauel entered the smithy at this time and rebutted. He had an upset expression on his face and Rabbit responded appropriately.

“Crops that can be harvested quickly aren’t competitive. They are easy to get anywhere.”

Lauel glared at him.

“We can overcome it by selling a lot at a cheap price. Currently, the only advantage of Reidan is the spacious land. Using the land is the only way to build up funds, so the reality is that Reidan can only be an agricultural city. No, first, who are you?”

Grid introduced him. “This is Rabbit. He was once the number two of the Mero Company, the largest in the north.”

Lauel was angry. He was only the number two of a northern company, yet he dared try to decide the city's policies.

Grid handed him the Great Lord's Sword.

"What is this?"

Grid explained to the bewildered Lauel. "Wear it and examine Rabbit yourself."

"What are you trying..."

Lauel was annoyed that Grid would listen to the opinion of a merchant over him. He grumbled as he wore the Great Lord's Sword and observed Rabbit.

"Heok."

These days, Lauel was often surprised.

Grid persuaded Lauel as he checked Rabbit's stats and skills. "I'm not discrediting your abilities, but why don't you try and listen to Rabbit's thoughts? Who knows? It might help you as well."

"..."



"I will entrust the overall management of the territory to Rabbit. I will work in the fields."

Lauel decided. He recognized that Rabbit's administrative ability was superior to his.

Grid questioned him. "Can't you also show great abilities as an administrator? Isn't it better to have Rabbit create a business company, since it will make more use of his talents?"

"Even though I have business ability, I don't have the 'Administration' skill."

In the end, Satisfy was a game. The importance of skills was higher than practical abilities. Administrators greatly increased the pace of domestic development because they had the Administration skill.

“In addition, diplomacy is included in the work of an administrator. Rabbit’s talent as a merchant will manifest itself in the form of diplomacy.

Lauel’s guess was correct.

After being appointed as the administrator, Rabbit reduced the scale of agriculture and invested in alchemy as well as facilities to amplify the value of blacksmiths, including Grid and Khan. At the same time, he exerted his talent as a merchant by talking diplomatically with ‘Baron Butin of the Saharan Empire.’



“The alchemists say that the sand of the desert has no value in alchemy.”

Currently, Reidan’s only available resource was sand. Sand was the basic material required for construction, but that was the role of sea sand. Unlike the sand at the sea, the desert sand was so fine that there was no place to use it.

Modern society could utilize the desert sand due to advanced technology, but Satisfy’s background was a medieval fantasy, so its technology was inferior to modern times. Rabbit tried to use the sand in magic and alchemy, but he couldn’t achieve satisfactory results.

Then one day.

“Let’s export the sand to Baron Butin.”

Rabbit came to Lauel and spoke nonsense. Lauel was perplexed. “Why should we export desert sand to Baron Butin?”

The desert was all over the west. There was an excess of sand so there was no point in exporting it. It was realistically impossible. Rabbit smiled at Lauel’s disapproval and explained.

“I will make it so that the baron has to import it.” Rabbit noted that Baron Butin owned one of the empire’s resorts where many wealthy people and nobles visited. “The people of Reidan have lived in this hot and desolate place for 10 years. I will advertise it like this. The sand of Reidan remedy of longevity that will improve human health.”

“...Huh?”



Lael was stunned by the absurd words.

Rabbit continued. "It's a luxury product made with magic, and those who don't have it will covet it. I will set the price higher so that the image of a luxury product will be firmly established. The longevity remedy won't be credible if it's cheap."

"No, what type of sophistry...?"

Lael wondered if Rabbit was sane. But Rabbit didn't care and kept talking.

"I will use Khan as my advertising model. He's older than 60, so if we put him front and center, the trust of the customers will increase and the reputation of the longevity remedy will rise."

Rabbit referred to the sands of Reidan as a 'longevity remedy.' Lael was convinced that Rabbit was crazy. Rabbit had high stats and great skills as a named NPC, but he had a clear flaw in his personality.

But what was the truth?

"It's selling well."

The sands of Reidan were called the 'Longevity Remedy' and started to be imported at the mad price of 3 gold per 10 grams.

Once the nobles and wealthy people who visited the Butin Barony heard about the reason why the sand of Reidan was called the Longevity Remedy, they couldn't resist buying out of curiosity.

"This might cause a serious problem in the future..."

Lael was concerned, but Rabbit reassured him.

"3 gold is huge for a commoner, but this is trivial for the rich."

Even if they knew it was a scam, they could just laugh it off. They didn't have to get angry over that level of money. In the first place, there was no reason to call it a scam. How could people know their exact lifespan? There was no way to prove that the lifespan of a person was increased or not increased by the Longevity Remedy, so there was no reason to call it a scam.

“The one thing I regret is that there aren’t more people visiting the Butin Barony. For the moment, the profit from selling this will stay at around 800 gold per month. But if the rumors of the goods become widespread in the future, things will change again.”

“...This is a good idea.”

800 gold a month. It was a ridiculously small sum for a big city. But the product being sold was mere sand. They just needed to put the sand that could be found anywhere in pretty glass bottles and sell them for 3 gold each. The net profit was 99.9%. If the sales amount rose like Rabbit predicted, it would be a powerful revenue source for Reidan.

‘He truly is a wealthy merchant...’

‘This is a complete scam.’

Lauel and the Overgeared members were alerted to the true nature behind Rabbit’s face.

Grid just laughed.

All types of talented people were gathering around him.

## CHAPTER 222

---

One month in reality and three months in Satisfy time passed.

In the meantime, Reidan's crops grew well. It was because the water channels discovered by Piaro provided nutrients to the land, and Grid's equipment improved the soil quality.

The financial burden diminished, so they no longer needed to import food at high prices. In addition, vegetation started to grow, the yellow dust became weak, and the people became healthier. The sight of the sick children improving brought tears to the people's eyes.

"This is all thanks to Duke Grid."

"Ah! That's right!"

The people had been suffering for the past 10 years and were about to starve to death, so Grid and the Overgeared members were like angels sent by Goddess Rebecca. The people were absolutely obedient to Grid and the Overgeared members, who were their saviors.

They were educated and trained as farmers, blacksmiths, architects, soldiers, etc. As a result, they were able to feel a sense of accomplishment from reviving the city with their own strength.

Reidan was full of vitality.

"Have you been out on the streets lately? Voices praising My Lord are everywhere."

"Really? I've been so busy that I don't have time to go outside."

In the past, Huroi had vowed to serve Grid to repay the favor. But now it was different. Huroi respected the maturing Grid and was loyal to him based on that.

"I'm proud of you."

The ghost town on the verge of destruction had now become lively. Thanks to the

Overgeared members, the monsters didn't threaten Reidan, and a small but powerful army was being trained by Jude.

Khan was nurturing young blacksmiths, and thanks to Rabbit, the overall speed of development of Reidan increased. Euphemina showed her strength in many fields by duplicating monster taming, blacksmithing and architectural skills.

In particular, Jishuka played a huge role as ruler of Bairan. She and the other two Overgeared members trained the knights and soldiers, and continued hunting the frostlight orcs and raiding the Guardian of the Forest. Thanks to this, the guild's warehouse was filled with various minerals and sylphid scales. Soon, all members of Overgeared were going to have an invisibility cloak.

The person who brought together such excellent talents and strong personalities? It was none other than Grid. Huroi's respect for Grid increased day by day.

"There's still a long way to go."

Grid wasn't satisfied with the present state. It was because Reidan was still in a deficit.

'We only have a smithy, barracks, and alchemy institute as facilities.'

The number of people wasn't increasing. Taxes also couldn't be raised. Even though he made five items a day, he couldn't see any profit at all. So Grid was in a bad mood. What would've happened if Grid sold the 450 items he made over the past three months to users instead of investing it in Reidan?

'I would've earned at least 1.5 billion won, even if I have to pay taxes and take into account the price of the materials... '

Of the 450 items, not one legendary rated item was produced, but there were two unique rated items. However, he couldn't sell them to users and used them for the facilities. Lael encouraged the grumbling Grid.

"Don't dwell on the immediate damages. Thanks to the items you made, the efficiency of each work field has increased by several times, and will return to you as a bigger profit."

"I know."

Now it was time for lunch. Due to all the work, Grid ate at the smithy while discussing things with Huroi and Lauel. On the other hand, Khan was busy teaching the young blacksmiths.

Lauel clicked his tongue. “Khan is growing stronger every day. As I look at his increased health, I sometimes wonder if Reidan’s desert sand really does improve longevity.”

“That inspiration is innate. Which reminds me, has there been a steady increase in sales for the Longevity Remedy?”

“Yes, this month’s sales has reached 1,230 gold.”

“Still, it isn’t even a quarter of Rabbit’s pay.”

Rabbit received a 500 gold salary as a viscount, then another 5,300 gold as his administrator salary. This was the ‘minimum’ value set by Rabbit himself. Even if he pledged his loyalty, he wouldn’t work for less than 5,300 gold a month. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that Reidan’s current deficit was due to Rabbit.

“But we shouldn’t begrudge him. Sir Rabbit’s value can’t be converted to money.”

“I know.”

Thanks to Rabbit, Reidan was growing quickly. The increase of domestic affairs was unrivaled when compared to other cities. Indeed, a named NPC like Rabbit with an S-grade administrative skill was worth any price.

‘Don’t fret and look to the future.’

After Reidan developed, the giant worms would be destroyed and the western area would be restored. Then he would use the western area as the foundation for becoming king. It was one of his immediate goals.

‘Then I will make money.’

Grid would become a tycoon. He didn’t want to suffer again because he didn’t have money.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

Grid ate the food that had been grown in three months, the rainbow potato. He hadn't been able to hunt for the past three months, so his level was stuck at 275, but he wasn't nervous because his stats increased every time he made an item higher than the epic rating.

Grid was a blacksmith, so he could level up his stats even if he worked in the smithy.



The Butin Barony was at the eastern end of the Saharan Empire. It was a rural area, with only the natural view of the sea. Furthermore, it was a very peaceful place where monsters didn't pop up, so it was extremely rare for users to come here.

However, the 3rd ranking merchant, Muto, operated a small company and was extremely focused on trading with the Butin Barony. The Butin Barony might be empty of users, but it was a resort for rich NPCs and nobles.

"The Longevity Remedy?"

Muto was focused on supplying luxury goods to the rich and nobles who visited the Butin Barony. His sales rate had decreased suddenly, and he finally identified the reason. He looked at the small amount of sand in the glass bottle and frowned.

"This sand is sold as a luxury product under the name Longevity Remedy? The selling rate of my products is falling because of this?"

Muto had seen countless items. As a merchant, his insight was excellent, so it wasn't difficult for him to see that the Longevity Remedy was just simple sand.

"It's a really good idea."

Which merchant came up with the idea of marketing the sand of Reidan as the Longevity Remedy? Muto marveled after hearing about it from the NPCs of the Butin Barony.

"This level of business acumen is almost at the level of a scam."

There must be a tremendous merchant hiding in Reidan. Muto was sure of it. He worried about how he could compete with such a huge merchant and soon came up with an idea.

“Isn’t there a huge desert surrounding Reidan?”

*Ssik.*

Muto smiled with satisfaction and immediately led his company to Reidan. But he faced difficulties as soon as he crossed the border.

“W-What is this?”

The guards of the Muto Company were over level 200. As mercenaries hired at an expensive price, they perfectly protected the company from monsters and bandits. But as soon as they entered the territory of Reidan, the giant worms, desert toads and other powerful monsters devoured the guards.

“T-This is crazy...!”

Why were the monsters so strong? The twin ogres were the strongest monsters he had seen so far, and they were nothing against the western monsters.

“R-Run away!”

The Muto Company had to run away from the crazy monsters. But Muto still didn’t forget to put the sand from the desert into his bag.

“Pant pant! Damn! I almost got killed!”

Muto trembled as he barely survived and returned to the Butin Barony. He was desperate, since he lost half of the guards in the desert.

“I have to sell all of the sand to recoup some of the losses.”

Muto went to find a merchant NPC. Then he brought out the Longevity Remedy he made from the sands of Reidan. However, the NPC clicked his tongue.

“The Longevity Remedy is made from sand collected in the center of Reidan, not ordinary sand from the desert. We only acknowledge the sand from Reidan’s lord as the Longevity Remedy, while everything else is rubbish. Let’s stop any transactions in the future. I no longer want to work with a crook like you.”

“...”

This was bad. He thought it would be easy. But his opponent had already penetrated into his brain. Muto was frustrated after losing many guards and clients because of mere sand.



“Garlic.” Shin Youngwoo logged out of Satisfy and went out into the living room for dinner. Then he found his parents peeling garlic and sat down beside them. “I’ll help you.”

Youngwoo’s parents ran a vegetable store, and garlic was treated as a commodity. They had to work hard everyday to peel the garlic. In the past, he didn’t help his parents, but now he was different.

He matured and was willing to help his parents. But his parents refused.

“Youngwoo, aren’t you having a hard time playing the game? You should take this time to rest.”

“Yes. This is our job. Youngwoo, you should go eat and focus on the game again.”

His parents dismissed the game in the past, but now they recognized it as his workplace. Youngwoo felt a sense of gratitude and sat down with a bright smile.

“I want to help.”

It wasn’t easy for a person with less experience to peel garlic. The surface of garlic was hard and the skin was very thin. It needed some tricks to peel the skin attached to the surface. Youngwoo had no dexterity since he was a child. Until he joined the army, he couldn’t even tie his shoelaces properly. It normally took Youngwoo a long time to peel one garlic, so he wouldn’t be a big help.

Youngwoo’s parents knew this fact, but they didn’t stop him, since their son said he was willing to help.

Then after a while.

“Oh my? Youngwoo, when did your dexterity become so good?”

His mother was full of admiration. Youngwoo quickly peeled the skin of the garlic like



a pro. The speed was comparable to his parents, who had been running a vegetable store for decades. His father was also surprised.

“What’s this?”

Youngwoo was even more amazed than his parents.

‘Unbelievable. Why is it so much easier to peel garlic?’

He felt like his dexterity had increased dramatically, unlike the past. What was the reason? Youngwoo pondered over it as he peeled the garlic. Then he got the answer within minutes.

‘It is the result of repetitive actions!’

A delicate hand was needed to make items. Since becoming Pagma’s Descendant, Youngwoo had made thousands of items. It seemed that his dexterity in reality increased through his memories and this experience.

‘I’ve seen it in the news before.’

A person repeatedly practiced swordsmanship Satisfy, and their skills increased in reality. It was the inevitable result of repetitive practice. Of course, a person’s physical ability in reality was significant lower than it was in Satisfy, so it was impossible to implement all the techniques. However, following some techniques wasn’t difficult.

It was the same reason why Youngwoo’s dexterity rose now.

“Huhuhu...”

Youngwoo laughed with satisfaction. He was glad that if he ever obtained a lover in reality, he would be able to make her happy with his dexterity. It was the moment when the legendary hand dexterity that brought ecstasy to women in Satisfy appeared in reality.

## CHAPTER 223

---

He helped his parents with the garlic and finished his meal. Then Youngwoo connected to his fan cafe and cheered.

“Finally...!”

Yesterday, the fan cafe had exactly 1,998,411 members, and now it exceeded two million. There was the golem invasion and he became the first user to become a duke, so his popularity had greatly increased.

‘I’m happy.’

The fact that two million people were showing interest and liking towards him made Youngwoo’s heart overwhelmed. He had been ignored and despised for a long time, so the affection of others was new and he felt happy every day.

‘I wonder what Noe’s fan cafe is like these days.’

After a long absence, Youngwoo accessed Noe’s fan cafe and laughed.

“I can’t catch up with his popularity.”

Noe’s fan cafe had reached 2.75 million members. The speed was rising much faster than Youngwoo’s fan cafes. The difference between the two fan cafes was increasing day by day. In the past, Youngwoo would be trembling with jealousy, but now he was different. He completely shook off the inferiority complex that was deeply rooted in him and wasn’t easily jealous anymore.

‘Noe’s rising popularity will increase awareness towards me, since I’m his owner.’

Youngwoo had been watching Lael for months, so even his thinking ability was improving. He thought positively and stopped writing bad comments on Noe’s fan cafe.

“Grid doesn’t know about Noe?”

It was the title of the day’s most popular post. What was this nonsense? Noe was his

pet. There was nothing he didn't know about Noe. He was the only one who knew about the stupid and simple personality hidden behind Noe's cute looks.

Youngwoo wondered how this speculative post became the most popular.

Title: Grid doesn't know about Noe?

Content: It has been a long time since Noe appeared in Reinhardt, making us cheer.

Noe's eyes that shine like jewels and the beauty that is enough to overpower our gaze. But he is 'still' strong. Noe was able to weaken the suddenly evolved ancient weapon by swallowing it, allowing Grid and the Overgeared Guild to win against the golem army.

Now I have a question. Originally, don't pets change shape and have a stronger presence as they level up? But Noe's appearance hasn't changed since the National Competition. In other words, it means that Noe's level isn't much different from the National Competition and Grid isn't nurturing him properly.

Think of it from Grid's perspective. As the first legendary class, he's a person with a very busy schedule. If you look at TV right now, his CFs play successively. As a top star, he has little time to play Satisfy.

Grid thought the words he read were absurd.

"Nonsense."

The CFs recently being aired were all filmed right after the National Competition. Currently, Grid had completely stopped all broadcasting activities. He was on Satisfy all the time except when eating and sleeping, and was struggling to manage Reidan.

However, the author of the post didn't know this and was just rattling off nonsense. Youngwoo felt frustrated as he read the rest of the post.

The fact that Grid has less time to play Satisfy means less time to raise Noe. So Noe's level hasn't changed since the National Competition. Then I can deduce that Grid has a very poor understanding of 'top-grade pets.'

Typical pets lost their loyalty to their owners and will return to the wild state if they are away from their owners for long periods of time. The owners of these pets usually put them in the inventory when they can't be with the pet for a long time (e.g. when logged out).

But what about drakes? As a 'top-grade pet,' its loyalty isn't easily lost, even when it has a long period of activity separate from its owner. This is why the owners of drakes can let them freely graze. A drake's owner often lets it hunt alone to raise their level and don't keep them in their inventory, even when they are logged out.

So let's point out the problem. Noe is better than a drake. The evidence is that he overwhelmed dozens of drakes alone and called himself the best demonic beast of hell. In other words, Noe should enjoy more freedom than a drake.

If Grid had given Noe freedom, then I'm sure his growth would be tremendous. However, Grid lacks understanding of pets and didn't give freedom to Noe, probably keeping Noe in his inventory.

Noe's growth became stagnant. This is proof of Grid's ignorance, and is an insult to the top-grade pets.

"Ah...!"

Youngwoo realized it as he read the post.

'I am really lacking understanding about pets.'

In the case of a common pet, the pet would hunt monsters with its master and the experience would be split between master and pet. This was why Youngwoo didn't raise Noe's level. Noe was very powerful even without raising his level, and Youngwoo didn't want to lose his experience to Noe.

'However, a top-grade pet can hunt independently from the owner and grow on their own?'

They didn't easily betray their owner.

'In the future, I should give Noe freedom so that he can grow.'

Noe hadn't eaten since the golem invasion. Apart from that one time, he was always in his inventory.

"...It must be frustrating."

Youngwoo was able to realize Noe's grievances. He felt sorry towards Noe. Then he thanked the author of the post for giving him new knowledge.

"He went too far."

At the same time, Youngwoo was also angry. In a community of 2.75 million members, it was too much to call someone ignorant just from mere deduction.

'I represent the Overgeared Guild.'

He couldn't ignore it because it was the same as insulting the Overgeared Guild. Youngwoo took immediate action.

God Grid isn't Bald's comment: Yes, next pet person please ^오^ I am an expert on all classes ~

The author of the post that Youngwoo read was a expert on pets. But in front of the keyboard warrior, he became a 'person who doesn't know about pets' and a 'non-expert.'

After that.

"Nyang! The best demonic beast of hell has emerged!"

Noe was still at level 35, despite destroying the ancient weapon.

"Is it time to eat? Nyang?"

Eyes filled with expectations looked at Grid, who commanded.

"From now on, you can move freely in the vicinity of Reidan. You can eat as many

monsters as you like, but don't do anything that will harm humans. In addition, report to me if you see anything suspicious... Finally, fly to me whenever I call, no matter what you are doing. Don't forget that I am your only master."

"Nyong..."

Noe's eyes became wet. The '人' shape snout opened with excitement as he asked.

"Master is really giving Noe freedom...? Noe can go...? Believe in Noe! Nyang!"

"Yes, as long as you follow my rules."

"Thank you! Nyang! Master is the best! Nyang!"

The little demon wings flapped as Noe circled around Grid before flying high into the sky.

"Cat...?"

The people of Reidan were stunned as they saw a black cat flying in the sky. It was the historic day when Noe, who would be revered as the guardian of the Reidan people, appeared in front of them for the first time.



Sehee and Yerim were stars among the high school population of South Korea. They were in the top 10 nationwide of the mock exams and also beauties, so they were the target of envy.

Recently, their popularity had skyrocketed. Before they were just stars of the high schools, but now they were stars of South Korea. Even foreigners recognized them. It was the aftermath of the golem invasion of Reinhardt that occurred around a month and a half ago in reality.

"Ruby!"

"Sexy Schoolgirl!"

The two girls who worked with Grid to save the Eternal Kingdom and became the first earls! People were enthusiastic every time they saw them.

“How did you join the Overgeared Guild?”

“What is God Grid like?”

“What is the secret to playing well while studying?”

“Why is your ID Sexy Schoolgirl...?”

Sehee and Yerim had to suffer from a barrage of questions. Various media also visited to request an interview. There were many companies who showed interest in them, causing a flood of CF model requests.

“Is this enough?”

It reached the point where it was impossible for Sehee and Yerim to go out without a disguise. After school ended. Before leaving the classroom, the two girls covered their faces as much as possible with masks and scarves. They mixed among the students and barely managed to leave the school.

Afterwards, the place they went to was a capsule room, not their homes or the library. They had a plan to play Satisfy three times a week and followed it.

Three hours later.

“Today was so much fun! Right?”

“Yes. I am now fully adapted to the new skills, so it’s fun to play.”

Sehee was now level 70 after the golem invasion. On the other hand, the Saintess’ Knight Yerim was still level 51 because she couldn’t raise her level during the golem invasion. However, it wasn’t a problem when the two girls played in a party.

The Saintess and Saintess’ Knight classes had great synergy. In addition, Youngwoo made items for them, so it was possible for them to hunt level 100 monsters when they joined forces. To borrow a phrase from Lael, they were ‘golden spoons’ who played the game to help Youngwoo after they raised their levels.

“It really is Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl.”

There were university students who followed Sehee and Yerim after they left the

capsule room. They had seen through Sehee and Yerim's disguise.

"It isn't even 10 p.m. yet, so why are you going home?"

"Let me buy you something delicious. We should become friendly, as we're both Satisfy users."

The four university students were all confident with their appearances. In fact, they were online shopping mall advertising models and were confident that pure high school girls would fall for them. But Yerim and Sehee weren't people who only looked at appearance.

Sehee had a hatred for men other than her brother, while Yerim looked at money.

"Do you have a lot of money? We only eat expensive things."

Yerim gave a dazzling smile and provoked the university students. The university students felt their hearts thump before they shouted.

"Tell us what you want! We will buy you anything!"

"That's okay. In fact, someone is already buying us a meal."

"Are you talking about Grid?"

"That's right."

"..."

The eyes of the four university students sharply cooled. In fact, they were avid fans of Yura and Jishuka. But they had the scandal with Grid at the National Competition, turning the students into fierce anti-fans of Grid. They couldn't tolerate that Grid had already gobbled up the world's best beauties, Yura and Jishuka, and now he was monopolizing Sehee and Yerim as well.

"That bastard Grid..."

"Hey, both of you. You shouldn't hang out with that type of playboy. Throw away that trash guy and come play with us."



The university students became agitated after hearing Grid's name and forcibly grabbed Sehee and Yerim's wrists.

"Remove your hand."

A voice filled with anger was heard. It was a voice familiar to anyone in South Korea and the world.

"Oppa!"

"Grid...!"

That's right. It was Shin Youngwoo. After Sehee and Yerim became famous, Youngwoo was worried about their safety. Therefore, he took on the role of bringing them home every night. Today he came to pick them up, only to become furious as he saw this scene.

"Take your hands off them right now. Then I will overlook it this time."

Youngwoo held a phone in his hand and pressed 112. But at that time, his phone ran out of battery.

*Beep.*

It turned off with a loud noise.

"Ah, this, really... '

Why was this happening to him?

## CHAPTER 224

---

Youngwoo's knowledge of human relationships was still limited. Youngwoo only used his phone to order delivery. He treated his phone as a decoration and didn't care about the battery life, leading to this situation.

'I'm screwed.'

Youngwoo was about to report the university students to the police, when he was shaken by the situation not turning out as planned. The four university students were aggressive towards him.

"Grid, isn't it hard to manage your estate?"

"Weren't you with Yura and Jishuka during the National Competition, so why are you free now?"

"I looked at your age on the Internet, so why are you trying to monopolize these girls as well? Do you want to be handcuffed for violating the law. Eh? Don't you know?"

The university students knew without a doubt that Youngwoo was older than them. They didn't even think about releasing the wrists of Sehee and Yerim.

'Those jerks.'

Youngwoo was angry when he heard the university students' tone of voice and his sister's pained expression. He wanted to run there and punch them in the jaw. But this was reality, not Satisfy.

In reality, Youngwoo was helpless. He had always been one-sidedly beaten by strong people. He had been beaten up many times, but now he wanted to commit violence against four healthy university students?

It was impossible.

First of all, Youngwoo looked around. It was to ask someone for help. Unfortunately, there was no one on the streets. It wasn't 10 p.m. yet, but it was fairly quiet. It was the result of Sehee and Yerim finding a empty place to avoid their popularity.

‘This isn’t ideal...’

Youngwoo took a deep breath. He suppressed his anger as much as possible and smiled.

“Let the kids go. Yes? We aren’t shooting a drama, so this isn’t interesting. Right?”

Youngwoo tried to persuade the university students. However, the university students didn’t move at all.

“What if I don’t want to?”

The university students couldn’t tolerate that he was monopolizing all the pretty women. Taking Yura and Jishuka, now he was taking their future prospects? The infuriated university students started to handle Sehee and Yerim more roughly. They dragged them with force and provoked Youngwoo.

“These girls will play with us tonight. Anyway, what does it matter who we are? We’re also people who make money from the game. It doesn’t matter who you play with, as long as the man gives you money right?”

“Let go of me!”

Sehee struggled to shake off the university students. However, a female high school student was unable to win against the strength of men in their early 20’s.

“Stay still!”

The university students grabbed Sehee harder instead of releasing her. Then they raised their hand like they would strike her.

“Won’t you act more moderately?”

At that time, the silent Yerim frowned.

“These damn scum... Do you want to die?” Youngwoo’s string of tension was snapped.

It didn’t matter if he couldn’t fight well. He couldn’t stand to see his little sister insulted and treated like this.

‘Even though I was a loser.’

When he was a highschool student. Youngwoo was always hit by Lee Junho for no reason. But he couldn’t fight back because he was afraid of bigger retribution. He laughed it off, even if he didn’t want to. He started to be ignored by the other students and this became a great trauma when he was an adult.

‘It has been awhile since I’ve overcome it.’

Youngwoo was no longer a loser. He wouldn’t give in to these thugs just because he was scared.

“What? You will kill us?”

“Puhahaha!”

The university students laughed at Youngwoo. In fact, Youngwoo’s school days were famous on the Internet. Some of his classmates circulated Youngwoo’s past onto the Internet after he became famous.

“This bastard can’t distinguish between reality and a game.”

“Hey Grid. This is reality, not Satisfy. Try and do Pagma’s Swordsmanship here! Kill! It isn’t possible. Then what is with this courage? Eh?”

The university students regarded Youngwoo as weak prey. Even Youngwoo himself didn’t think he could fight against the university students. However, he couldn’t retreat, so he just clenched his fists.

‘It’s shaky.’

A university student spat out his phlegm and approached. Youngwoo wondered if he could beat any of them. The Youngwoo of the past wouldn’t have endured the pressure and run away. However, he improved his self-esteem through Satisfy and had the feeling of ‘courage.’

‘If I have to fight, I will fight.’

Fighting spirit rose in Youngwoo’s eyes. In reality, he wasn’t Satisfy’s Grid, but he had his own pride.

“This damn bastard.”

The university student became angry at the sight of Youngwoo and punched at him. The university student’s fist was quick. He had no qualms about hitting a person. Youngwoo was surprised when he saw the flying punch.

‘It’s slow?’

Youngwoo had experienced numerous battles with strong opponents in Satisfy. Just like his dexterity, his vision in reality was also impacted. The university students hadn’t learned martial arts, so they weren’t a threat to Youngwoo.

*Deftly.*

Youngwoo succeeded in avoiding the fist with the university student with swift movements.

“What? He avoided it?”

The university student made an expression like it was ludicrous. Then he spat out his cigarette and kicked out. As a Korean citizen, he was taught Taekwondo during his childhood, so his kick contained more power and speed than his fist.

‘If you concentrate more strength in your thighs and buttocks, then your upper body’s forward speed will increase.’

The teachings of Piaro passed through Youngwoo’s head. At the same time, Youngwoo’s upper body moved forward. Then the kick of the university student flew above Youngwoo’s head and hit the air. Youngwoo remembered the teachings of Piaro and felt something eerie as the kick passed above him.

‘It isn’t just the limbs. Mobilize the muscles of the throat to put weight on the end of the sword.’

Sword? He had swung it thousands of times. Controlling his muscles? He received a thorough education from Piaro. Youngwoo thought of his fingertips as a sword and swung them.

*Peeok!*

“...!”

The university student couldn't respond to the hand gesture that came from below him. He was hit in the chin and couldn't even scream before collapsing.

“...Eh?”

“W-What?”

The university students never imagined their friend being defeated and were shocked. Youngwoo was even more surprised than them.

‘I won?’

He had hit a person for the first time since being born. He even knocked the person down. Before, he had always run away or was beaten up.

*Duguen! Duguen!*

Youngwoo's heart thudded at the whole new experience. The other university students rushed towards him.

“This jerk!”

A university student flew towards Youngwoo with all his strength. Youngwoo was still calm.

‘It's sloppy.’

The orbit of the kick was very simple. Youngwoo took two steps back and swung his arm.

*Chaaeng!*

Youngwoo's hand accurately struck the university student's ankle.

“Ugh...!”

The time when he went to Cork Island to collect the fire stones. Youngwoo had flown there without a break, and was able to taste the pleasure of pushing his body to the

limit. He wanted to taste this addictive sensation in reality and jogged with Sehee every morning, as well as going mountain climbing on the weekend. He also didn't forget simple weight training.

This had been repeated for three months. As a result, Youngwoo's body was disciplined compared to the weak bodies of the university students that were filled with alcohol and tobacco.

"I-It hurts..."

The university student that was struck by Youngwoo's hand shuddered at the pain. It was just like being hit by a metal pipe. It was natural. Youngwoo followed the teachings of a great swordsman, so he showed a power that ordinary people couldn't endure.

"T-This...!"

According to the rumors floating around the Internet, Youngwoo was a loser who was always beaten up. But he could actually fight well? The remaining two university students were shaken.

On the other hand, Youngwoo admired his own ability and wanted to fight some more. He wanted to enjoy this strength.

"What? You aren't coming?"

Youngwoo moved his finger and provoked them. The remaining two university students couldn't bear it anymore and moved.

"What is that triumphant air!?"

*Pepeok! Peok!*

The dog fight started. The university students randomly swung their fists and feet at Youngwoo. If two opponents struck at the same time, Youngwoo wouldn't be able to avoid it unless he was a martial artist.

Youngwoo responded to both attacks using the footwork he acquired from Pagma's Swordsmanship. He was like Bruce Lee as he moved like flowing water to evade the attacks from both people.

However, it was only for a moment. Youngwoo's body wasn't tempered enough to keep up these actions. His health was at the level of the general public. He couldn't reproduce Pagma's Swordsmanship forever. There came a time when he stepped wrongly, twisting his feet and causing his posture to collapse.

"Hahat! This jerk is a fool!"

Youngwoo was indiscriminately attacked by the university students who laughed at him.

"Ugh! Eek!"

*Bam bam bam!*

Youngwoo felt like he could see the illusion of stars flashing in front of his eyes. But in the meantime, Sehee and Yerim were freed.

"Run away!"

Youngwoo swallowed down the words to call the police quickly. Even if he didn't say it, he believed that they would report it to the police station.

At that moment.

"That is enough."

Unlike Sehee, who was screaming and wondering what to do, Yerim jumped lightly. Youngwoo was attracted by her white and smooth legs as she kicked the university students.

*Pakak!*

Despite wearing a short skirt, Yerim's kick perfectly struck the backs of the university students.

"Cough..."

"Ugh!"

Youngwoo suspected that they might've died. The university students exposed the



whites of their eyes as they fainted.

‘What? Why is she so strong?’

Yerim reached out a hand to the stunned Youngwoo.

“Can you rise? My prince.”

Yerim looked very beautiful under the streetlights. She had a mature appearance that made it hard to believe she was a high school student, and her half moon eyes were sure to fascinate anyone.

But she was a minor, so Youngwoo didn’t consider her that way.

After that.

“What? 3rd dan Taekwondo? Hey, then why were you just watching? It’s really too much.”

In front of a convenience store.

Sehee and Yerim were rubbing eggs on Youngwoo’s bruised face. Youngwoo was surrounded by two pretty girls, so he looked like a harem king from a manhwa. But Youngwoo didn’t care about other people’s gazes.

He was busy grumbling.

“If Yerim had fought from the beginning, Oppa wouldn’t look like this.”

“It’s rude to interfere in a fight between men, so I endured it.”

“It wasn’t a fight between men... It was one against four.”

“Hihi, anyway, it was great.”

Youngwoo was strong like a normal person. He might not be really strong, but his courage to protect his sister deserved praise. Today, Yerim’s crush on Youngwoo became much bigger. She really wanted to marry Youngwoo.

“Urgh... Then let’s go back. And from now on, both of you are banned from going to a

capsule room. I will buy both of you capsules. Yes? Eh?”

Youngwoo tried to get up from the chair he was sitting on. But his muscles were sore from the aftermath of the fight and being hit. Yerim grabbed Youngwoo to stop him from falling sideways.

“Haah.” Yerim let out a strange sound. It was because Youngwoo’s fingers had moved from her underarm to her waist.

“W-What?”

Youngwoo became surprised by the sound while Yerim blushed and her eyes became moist.

“...Oppa is a really great person.”

What did that mean? Sehee didn’t know the meaning, but Youngwoo understood it properly. He cleared his throat from the embarrassment.

## CHAPTER 225

---

“Finally! Finally level 300!”

It had been four months since the Overgeared Guild moved to Reidan. Toban was the last member of the former Tzedakah Guild to reach level 300. The powerful monsters of the west stimulated their growth.

“There will be a cataclysm in the unified rankings.”

“Cataclysm?”

“The top seven have firmly maintained their rankings but... I can safely say that most of the top 40 rankings are dominated by the Overgeared members.”

“Why is that a cataclysm? It isn’t anything special.”

Originally, all of the Tzedakah Guild members were ranked in the top 50. The average ranking had only risen by 10, so Grid thought it wasn’t that big of a deal.

‘It is rather strange that no one has entered the top seven, despite the items I made.’

Grid might be disappointed, but the world was astonished. The top 100 rankings didn’t fluctuate easily, so the present growth rate of the Overgeared members was unprecedented. Media companies around the world wondered ‘What secrets are hidden in Reidan that can allow them to grow so quickly?’

『 The reporters have failed to enter the west. 』

『 In the western part of the Eternal Kingdom, there are monsters that have never been seen before. Experts speculate that only a party of at least level 280 users or rankers can enter... 』

『 It seems like the Overgeared members are raising their level quickly by hunting the powerful monsters in the west. 』

『 Um... The monsters in the west will be a double-edged sword to the Overgeared Guild. The level up speed of the Overgeared members has risen exponentially, but

there are few users who can move to Reidan due to the high entry barriers. 』

『 That's right. Reidan's speed of development will be slow. Duke Grid will definitely be hurt. 』

*Ttang! Ttang!*

There was the constant sound of hammering from the large smithy in Reidan. The 30 young blacksmiths taught by Khan were constantly producing the supplies that Reidan needed.

'I'm tired.'

Grid was still busy despite the manpower increasing. After their third advancement class, the Overgeared members commissioned more powerful items, so he needed to continue making items.

'But this damn hammering will be over soon.'

He only had five commissions left. Grid was free after he made those five items.

'Let's plan for the future.'

Grid had personal challenges. The first was to complete his class quest, the second was to recover all the pavranium, and the third was to complete Piaro's quest. His work as a lord? He had the incomparably clever Lauel and Rabbit to take care of it, so there were no problems.

"You over there."

Grid stopped hammering and called out to a soldier guarding the entrance of the smithy.

"Did you call?"

The soldier ran over with tight discipline.

'The great duke called me!'

The soldier's eyes shone like lanterns as Grid ordered. "Bring Minor here."

“Yes!”

After 30 minutes.

“Oh, what do you want?”

A boy with a disgruntled expression came to the smithy. Despite possessing the talents of a great miner, he was fostered as a ‘minerals detector’ because he possessed the skill ‘Minerals Master (S+).

“I will give you an escort to search for the presence of the golem’s labyrinths here in the west.”

“It isn’t an escort, but surveillance.”

“Someday, I will give you freedom if you swear true allegiance to me.”

“...Well, I do acknowledge you these days. You’re a commoner who became a duke. But I’m still wondering if a genius like me should devote the rest of my life to you.”

Minor possessed the skill ‘Talent will Reveal Itself (SS).’ His talent would always be clear to others, so he was destined to receive a lot of temptations in life. He was arrogant and would easily betray a person, so his loyalty wasn’t guaranteed.

“Is it lacking to be the subordinate of a duke?”

“Indeed. At a minimum, shouldn’t it be a king?”

“Hoh... You should remember that.”

Grid would surely become a king and would obtain him. Grid pledged as he waved his hands.

“Go now.”

“Yes, yes.”

Minor gave an insincere answer. But Grid knew better than anyone that he would work properly.

‘The problem if searching for pavranium in the west is resolved...’

The only things left were the class quest and Piaro’s revenge quest. However, he couldn’t proceed with his class quest right now. It was impossible for Grid to get God Yatan to bless the pavranium.

‘Even Yura doesn’t knew where the First Servant of the Yatan Church is... First, I should resolve Piaro’s grudge.’

The cause of Piaro’s heart sickness, Asmophel. If Grid defeated the former vice-captain of the Red Knights, Piaro could be freed from these chains.

‘Once he is in a perfect condition, he might become my subordinate...’

The hopeful Grid continued making items.

Then five items later.

Grid completely all the items for the guild members and used the skill the Legendary Blacksmith’s Creation.

[Legendary Blacksmith’s Creation Skill]

You can create three equipment item production methods every time the skill level of the ‘Legendary Blacksmith’s Craftsmanship Skill’ goes up.

Number of items that can be created at present: 12/15.

\* When items are produced using this skill, the name of the creator is automatically placed on the item.

Then the familiar notification windows started to emerge.

[What item do you want to create?]

“Heavy boots.”

[Have you decided on 'Heavy Boots?']

"Yes."

[What materials would you like to use?]

"Um..."

He shouldn't use only high grade minerals such as black iron, mithril and blue orichalcum as materials. The reason Grid wanted to make heavy boots was because he wanted weight. According to Piaro's advice, the heavier the shoes worn, the greater the power of the greatsword.

"The main material will be steel. I will mix blue orichalcum into it to add strength and hardness, and to make it exert more power in dark places. Ah, I have to make the color darker by mixing in black iron so that it will harmonize with my armor."

[Have you decided?]

"Yes."

[Please design the item.]

Grid was a lot more smart and skillful compared to when he first created Failure. He perfectly drew the shape of the boots he wanted on the blank blueprint in front of him.

"It's done."

Over the past four months, he made more than 600 items and his dexterity stat

exceeded 3,000 points. Thanks to that, Grid was able to draw a delicate image and the shape of the boots was completed in a practical and excellent manner. They were big, black boots that came up to just below the knees. They had a rustic type of beauty.

[Have you decided? When you complete the blueprint, the number of available creation skill will decrease by one.]

Grid clicked the button without hesitation. Then the shape of the boots was corrected by the system to make it look more perfect.

[Please describe the characteristics of the item.]

“Heavy and solid boots. Thanks to the nature of blue orichalcum, the defense will increase in dark places.”

It was a simple, but accurate description. Based on Grid’s description, the system started distributing the performance and options of the item.

[Finally, please decide the name of the item.]

From now on, all the items he created would proudly boast of the legendary blacksmith who created them. Grid replied in a proud voice, “Grid’s Boots.”

[Have you decided on ‘Grid’s Boots?’]

“Yes.”

Grid planned to attach his name to every item he designed in the future.



'I will aim to complete a set item based on these boots.'

[A new item, 'Grid's Boots' have been created.]

[Grid's Boots]

Rating: Epic ~ Legendary

Epic Rating Information:

Durability: 335/335 Defense: 324

Movement Speed: -12%

Evasion Rate: -14%

\* Increases defense by 10% against attacks from the bottom.

\* When using a dashing skill, there is a 30% chance of failure.

\* Defense will increase by 10% in dark places.

Unique Rating Information:

Durability: 401/401 Defense: 388

Movement Speed: -10%

Evasion Rate: -12%

\* Increases defense by 12% against attacks from the bottom.

\* When using a dashing skill, there is a 25% chance of failure.

\* Defense will increase by 15% in dark places.

Legendary Rating Information:

Durability: 496/496 Defense: 470

Movement Speed: -8%

Evasion Rate: -10%

\* Increases defense by 15% against attacks from the bottom.

\* When using a dashing skill, there is a 20% chance of failure.

\* Defense will increase by 20% in dark places.

An item designed by a legendary blacksmith. Designed with a perfect combination of steel, black iron and blue orichalcum, it boasts overwhelming defense. However, there are many disadvantages to its function because it is only focused on defense.

In particular, it is too heavy, so movement is restricted.

User Restriction: Level 320 or higher. More than 1,450 strength. More than 1,200 stamina. Advanced Heavy Armor Mastery Level 5 or higher.

Weight: 2,930

The effectiveness was very low compared to Braham's Boots. It could be considered to be boots designed specifically for tanker classes, rather than damage dealers who relied on charging techniques. However, the defense was nearly twice as strong as armor of the same class. The defense was unusually high for boots, considering that boots had a quarter of the defense of armor.

'This is perfect for me.'

In the first place, Grid didn't have a evasive type of fighting style. He favored swinging the sword. It wasn't just a matter of control, but a style unique to the greatsword. Furthermore, Grid had no charging skills.

'The boots won't have any negative effect on me, except for a reduction in movement speed. These boots will also suit Vantner and Toban.'

Grid was satisfied with the finished creation. He dreamed that one day, both him and the Overgeared members would be armed with a 'Grid set,' and started to make an item for himself.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

"Ohh...!"

The skills of a legendary blacksmith was constantly studied by 30 young blacksmiths and Khan, so the future was bright.



It had been a year since the fall of Pope Drevigo. Who would become the new pope after Drevigo? Numerous senior priests ran as pope candidates. Most of them were good priests and had a sense of mission to lead 70 million people to the path of light.

However, a small number of them wanted to be the pope to satisfy their individual needs. In particular, Pascal of the Judar Church was very ambitious.

“What if I became the master of 70 million people? The momentum of our family will pierce the sky and Father will surely become a duke.”

Pascal’s father was an earl of the Saharan Empire. Originally Pascal was a viscount, but he joined the church and became the leader of the Judar Church. Now he was looking at a higher place.

“I understand. Pascal, I will help you become the pope.”

The largest religion on the continent was on the verge of falling into the hands of the empire. At this time, the 70 million people who followed Goddess Rebecca’s teachings might become a political tool of the empire.

“Isabel-chan!”

The first unique hidden class, Damian, was trembling with sorrow. It was because Isabel’s life was sharply decreasing after the unsealing of Lifael’s Spear.

## CHAPTER 226

---

White Transformation referred to the technique of borrowing the goddess' power stored in the three divine artifacts of the Rebecca Church. It was a technique that allowed a person to borrow power that exceeded the human body. However, this power placed a heavy burden on the body.

Rebecca's Daughters refrained from using White Transformation as much as possible, and shortened the duration when they inevitably had to use it. But Isabel had been in the White Transformation state for the past year.

It was because Grid unsealed Lifael's Spear. Her life energy was rapidly becoming depleted.

"Cough! Cough!"

Her platinum hair had turned grey. Her shining eyes were faded like she was dead, and her normally flushed cheeks were pale. Nevertheless, she still looked beautiful.

'Right now she is only 18 years old...'

She was about to die at this age.

Damian looked at Isabel out of habit and finally started crying. "How many times have I told you? I said that Lifael's Spear must be sealed! Then why... Why aren't you listening to me? Huh...? Isabel-chan, are the orders so important? More than your life?"

"Cough! Cough!"

Isabel lying in bed didn't answer. She was staring at the distant sky out the window and her hearing had long been lost. She didn't even hear Damian's voice shouting right beside her.

"Isabel-chan..."

Damian's handsome face twisted. His face was streaked with tears and a runny nose, so someone laughed at him.

“Why are you empathizing with tools?”

It was Pascal. He entered Isabel’s room without knocking, causing Damian to tremble.

“You...! How many times have I warned you not to describe them as tools?”

Damian hated Pascal.

The 5th Pope Franz felt a moment of compassion and sealed the divine artifacts of the church, leading to the weakening of the church. This was the logic used to convince the church that Lifael’s Spear shouldn’t be sealed again.

The person who spoke it was Pascal.

Pascal just shrugged. “Rebecca’s Daughters are fostered to serve this church in exchange for their lives. Don’t get caught up in useless sympathy and think about what is needed to keep the church. You are just damaging yourself.”

As his descendant, Pascal respected 5th Pope Franz. However, he couldn’t understand all of Franz’ policies. From the beginning, weren’t Rebecca’s Daughters people brought up as tools? Sealing the power of the divine artifacts just because they couldn’t endure it?

It was preposterous. An ignorant mistake. Pascal and most of the senior priests of the Rebecca Church thought this way. They planned to contact Pagma’s Descendant so that he could release the seals of the two remaining artifacts as soon as possible.

But Damian couldn’t tolerate it.

“I will never accept it.”

Rebecca’s paladins were much weaker than the Judar and Dominion paladins, so it wasn’t a popular class. However, Damian walked this path to the end without giving up just because of Rebecca’s Daughters.

Isabel, Rin, Luna. Damian longed for these three girls to always be happy. He wished for them to smile forever. He couldn’t stand them suffering.

“They are people like us. And they have worked harder for this church than anyone else. To disparage them and call them mere tools... Goddess Rebecca won’t forgive it.”

“You dare mention Goddess Rebecca? You are deceived by the beautiful appearance of the tools and lost control. Stupid.”

Pascal laughed at Damian. It was similar to those who ridiculed Damian in reality for running a fancafe of Rebecca’s Daughters.

Damian couldn’t understand them. “... Why do you have to ridicule someone’s love and respect?”

“The problem is that the target is a tool, not a person.”

“Isn’t this just like people in reality saying that Rebecca’s Daughters are NPCs, not humans...?”

“Reality? NPC? I can’t understand the language you are using.”

“Shut up!”

“ ... ”

Pascal was the former leader of the Judar Church and a pope candidate, so he had mighty divine power. Rebecca’s Daughters were the only ones in the church with higher divine power than him.

However, at this moment.

“They are people too! They rejoice in every moment! They are impressed! Angry! Sad! They are the same as us! Not tools or NPCs! Don’t compare them to such things!”

The divine power that Damian emitted was threatening. It was a threat to Pascal, who was likely to become the pope after Drevigo.

‘This is the power of the Goddess’ Agent...!’

Pascal had always ignored Damian, who usually chased after Rebecca’s Daughters. He had laughed when he heard some priests talk about trying to put Damian as pope, but now he was wary of Damian.

The upset Damian proclaimed to him. “I will change everything! I will root out all the rotten people, including you, who treat Rebecca’s Daughters as sub-human beings! For

Isabel-chan and Rin-chan! And for the sake of Luna-chan!"

Damian accepted the quest that he put on hold.

"I...! I will become the pope!"

[The quest 'Become the Pope' has been accepted.]

[Become the Pope]

Difficulty Level: SS

It has been one year since the death of 13th Pope Drevigo.

The Rebecca Church has barely recovered from the confusion and is now preparing to elect a new pope. However, Pascal is now the most powerful pope candidate and he plans to use the Rebecca Church as a political tool.

As the agent of the goddess, you have an obligation to guide the Rebecca Church to the right path and to stop Pascal's ambitions. Your power, beliefs and willpower will play a major role in defeating irrational violence and calming political strife.

After your crowning, you can never disobey Goddess Rebecca.

The faithful church members will cheer for you.

Quest Clear Conditions: In three months, become the pope in the pope's election.

Quest Clear Rewards: Second class 'Pope' will be obtained. 'Goddess Rebecca's Armor,' 'Goddess Rebecca's Helmet,' and 'Goddess Rebecca's Gloves' will be acquired.

Quest Failure: Pascal will become the pope. The Rebecca Church will decline even worse than the days of Drevigo.

"You will become the pope?"

Pascal was angry. He'd already bought more than half of the votes. This declaration had no foundation to succeed.

"Well, good. As the Goddess' Agent, you are qualified to be a pope candidate. I respect

you.”

*Thump thump.*

Pascal nodded before heading over to Isabel’s bed. Isabel looked at him and he gave her an order.

“A Yatan Temple was found in Kent Village on the outskirts of the empire. Show them the divine power of the spear. Ah, can you hear me? This is the command. Read this and act accordingly.”

The user of Lifael’s Spear always had White Transformation triggered. Naturally, the work had to be done fast, so the elders assigned Isabel more duties than the other two Rebecca’s Daughters. As a result, Isabel’s life energy was depleting more quickly, but the elders didn’t care. They were already preparing substitutes in large quantities.

“I will go.” Damian intercepted the command. “I will take on all the duties that she will perform in the future.”

Pascal rejected it. “Didn’t I say it before? Are you making fun of the elders’ commands? As you know, the pope’s seat is currently empty so they are working on his behalf. Violating their orders is like going against the pope...”

“I am the Goddess’ Agent.” Damian responded strongly to Pascal, who tried to repeat an explanation that Damian had heard several times already. “As you said, the elders aren’t the pope.”

“...”

“I don’t want to hear anymore about the elders’ orders. Only the true pope and Goddess Rebecca can command me.”

Damian’s words sounded good, but he had a weak base. The senior priests didn’t treat Damian as important and ignored his opinions. But now Damian made his position clear, so Pascal couldn’t help feeling dumbfounded.

“Hrmm...”

Pascal tried to think.



‘If this guy is busy on the battlefield, he will be less likely to win the pope’s election held in three months.’

Damian wasn’t competition in the first place, but it would be a good idea to clear the path.

Pascal nodded. “Go ahead. But I doubt that you will be able to perform the difficult missions with your abilities.”

“I am strong.”

He had a unique hidden class. Now Damian was different from the past. He was no longer the extra who just watched while Grid fought Drevigo. Damian was also a protagonist.

“Kukuk, good. Prepare your heart. If you become tired and fall down, Isabel will take on the missions again.”

Then Pascal left the room. Damian cursed him and planned for the future.

‘The mission is in the east of the empire. It is relatively close to the western part of the Eternal Kingdom.’ Reidan was located in the west of the Eternal Kingdom. ‘I will stop by to meet him.’

The person who went against Pope Drevigo and saved Rebecca’s Daughters. He helped Damian become the Goddess’ Agent. Also...

‘The only one who can seal Lifael’s Spear.’

Pagma’s Descendant, Grid. He was the only person Damian could rely on.

“Damian...”

Isabel called out to Damian who was about to leave. Damian took a deep breath. His expression that was distorted with rage gradually softened to a smile.

“I am going, Isabel-chan. Please stay well.”

Damian said goodbye to her with a smile.



[The experience of (Witness of God's Weapon) Legendary Blacksmith's Craftsmanship Skill Lv. 5 has increased by 19%.]

[A unique rated item was produced, increasing all stats by +4.]

[Reputation throughout the continent will rise by +150.]

[You currently have 25,110 reputation throughout the continent. You can use the Reputation Store when your reputation reaches over 30,000.]

"It's good."

Grid was very satisfied as he checked the result.

## CHAPTER 227

---

[Grid's Boots]

Rating: Unique

Durability: 477/477 Defense: 483

Movement Speed: -10%

Evasion Rate: -7%

\* Increases defense by 12% against attacks from the bottom.

\* When using a dashing skill, there is a 25% chance of failure.

\* Defense will increase by 15% in dark places.

Weight: 1,930

“Good, good. It wasn’t an epic rating.”

In the past four months, Grid had produced over 630 items, but he hadn’t produced one legendary item. However, he produced five unique rated items, so he was very pleased.

‘Five unique items out of 630 items... It’s so rare that I was lucky. And honestly, I am reluctant to make any more legendary items.’

Grid had made eight legendary items after becoming Pagma’s Descendant. If he produced two more, a ‘special event’ was likely to occur that would make him feel sick. He would rather make unique items.

“The unique rated items aren’t greatly lacking compared to legendary items.”

The 30 young blacksmiths approached Grid who was grinning with satisfaction. They admired Grid’s Boots.

“Duke Grid, this is a work of art!”

“The degree of completion can’t be described in words!”

“Such elegance hidden inside a primitive design...! It truly is high quality!”

It was practically impossible for inferior blacksmiths to understand the work of the legendary blacksmith Grid. They just felt like it was great. But unlike their current appearance, their potential for development was enormous.

Grid had searched the 20,000 people of Reidan and selected those with excellent qualities, then Khan taught them. The ability of Grid and Khan to closely observe their skills exceeded common sense.

‘At least eight of them are going to become advanced blacksmiths. I will raise new blacksmiths around them.’

They were people who might’ve become advanced blacksmiths in another city. Grid had the Blacksmith’s Affection skill, so he wasn’t exaggerating.

#### [Blacksmith’s Affection]

Appreciation of the NPC, which is the maximum skill level of the blacksmith, a minimum of 1 and a maximum of up to 5 randomly.

The blacksmith who received your teachings will be loyal to you for life and will share with you every time they learn new item production methods.

‘Anyway, next is the enhancement...’

Grid had a passive skill that ‘increased the probability of item enhancement.’ He enhanced Dainsleif to +8 and Failure to +9, so Grid wanted to try strengthening these boots to at least +8.

‘I’m aiming to use the Grid set for a long time, so I want to try enhancement...’

To do this, he needed enhancement stones. But the price of the enhancement stones was rising. At the present time, the price of a general enhancement stone was 180 gold and a blessed enhancement stone was 2,500 gold. Given his previous experience and the current price of the enhancement stones, he would need at least 500,000 gold to

enhance one piece of equipment to +8.

‘Dammit, why does the price of the enhancement stones keep climbing? In the old days, the price of the enhancement stones were 100 gold and the blessed enhancement stones were 1,200 gold.’

It was because the overall level of the users had risen. The higher the level, the longer it took to get out of that level section. Therefore, users felt the need to enhance their current items. As demand grew, the price of the enhancement stones also grew. There was no reason for the price of the enhancement stones to go down, unless the S.A. Group significantly increased the drop rate.

However, the S.A. Group wasn’t able to raise the drop rate of the enhancement stones. In order to maintain game service for a long time, the minimum requirement was to avoid gold inflation.

However, Grid couldn’t think of such complex things. He just lamented and sighed.

“Huh?”

Grid suddenly became confused. It was because the 30 blacksmiths admiring Grid’s Boots were now depressed.

“What’s wrong?” Grid questioned and the blacksmiths started explaining.

“Lauel commanded us to produce boots and gauntlets to supply the soldiers. We’re working hard on the boots and gauntlets, but...”

“After seeing Duke Grid’s work, the boots and gauntlets that we produced are too insignificant.”

“We know that it isn’t possible to make items at the same level as Duke Grid, but can you teach us so that we can at least mimic it?”

Khan had already passed on the boots production method to them. However, they were hoping for Grid to teach them instead of Khan.

‘I feel sorry...’

Grid watched Khan. But Khan just smiled.

“I don’t mind. Their desire to learn from you is very natural.”

A legendary blacksmith was on a different dimension from an advanced blacksmith. Khan knew this better than anyone. Grid saw his heart and nodded. Then he started smelting four pieces of iron ore in front of the 30 blacksmiths.

“It is very simple to make boots. Watch and learn.”

“Yes!”

‘I can receive the teachings of the great Duke Grid!’

The 30 blacksmiths’ eyes shone as they watched Grid. Grid made the boots while adding brief explanations, then...

[The experience of the Legendary Blacksmith’s Breath Skill Lv. 4 has increased by 9%.]

[The experience of (Witness of God’s Weapon) Legendary Blacksmith’s Craftsmanship Skill Lv. 5 has increased by 19%.]

[When legendary rated items are produced, all stats will permanently rise by +10.]

[Reputation throughout the continent will rise by +500.]

“...”

Grid made legendary rated level 80 steel boots, shortening the time to the ‘special event.’

“Wah! Really amazing boots!”

“You can easily produce such a great piece!”

“Indeed, Duke Grid is a legend!”

“Damn...”

Grid shed tears. If Grid’s Boots were made with the legendary rating, he wouldn’t have

felt so bad. Now one more legendary item remained until the special event happened.

“Hah...”

Grid could only sigh as he left the smithy. He couldn't let go of his unhappiness at completing boots for a soldier with a legendary rating.

“Sigh...”

*Trudge trudge.*

He had no strength in his steps. Grid staggered like a man who had lost his country. The people who saw him started to worry.

“Duke Grid is always proud and dignified, yet now he is having a hard time...”

“Surely a crisis isn't approaching Reidan?”

“Maybe it's a large monster invasion...?”

Originally, it was a law that bad rumors spread faster. The security rating that was maintained at a stable figure thanks to Jude and the soldier's efforts dropped dramatically. Jude and the Overgeared members were confused when they found out that the cause was Grid, but Grid didn't even know about it.



Reidan Castle.

‘According to Piaro, Asmophel's escorts are very strong...’

Grid was unable to abandon enhancing the boots and searched the guild's warehouse. He hoped to find enhancement stones inside. However, the guild's warehouse only had a few minerals and sylphid scales that were supplied by Jishuka in Bairan.

“In the end, I'll have to buy them.”

Grid checked his inventory. He currently had 20,000 gold. It was the money he acquired from disposing of the loot dropped by monsters that he hunted on the way here. What about the 5.5 million gold acquired from the golem invasion? Five million

gold was used as the guild's funds, while the remaining 500,000 was converted to Korean money.

Grid currently didn't have enough money.

"With this much money, I can only enhance it to +5 if I'm lucky."

More money was needed. Grid went to his private warehouse. But there wasn't a single item in his warehouse that was worth money. A few months ago, he disposed of most of his items to acquire the money for his land and building in reality.

"Shit..."

He was a duke! Why did he have to be the owner of a big city?

"Huh?"

Grid was grumbling that Reidan was a poor city when he suddenly found an item in a corner of the warehouse. It was a glass bottle the size of his little finger. There was golden liquid in the glass bottle.

'Maybe this will make me some money?'

[Goddess' Essence]

Weight: 0.1

It was an item he acquired from the Pope Drevigo raid. However, even the Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal skill didn't have an explanation, so he didn't know where to use it.

'The pope wouldn't drop a cheap item...'

Pope Drevigo was the one who dropped the Holy Light Battle Gear, which was the strongest armor set. Grid thought that the Goddess' Essence dropped by Drevigo was bound to have considerable value. But it was just a vague expectation. It was difficult to gauge the value because he didn't know where to use it.



‘What should I do? Ah!’

It was a mysterious item that couldn’t be determined with the eyes of a blacksmith. Then a well-informed person was needed to figure out the identity. And he had such a person nearby.

It was Rabbit.

‘He has handled many goods, so won’t he be able to recognize the value of this?’

Please let it be a valuable item, as he expected. Grid eagerly looked for Rabbit.



Rabbit’s office had documents stacked up like a mountain.

“I don’t know.” Rabbit observed the Goddess’ Essence a few times before giving up.

Grid panicked at the unexpected result. “There’s something you can’t grasp with your insight?”

“I know that is is liquid that contains the divine power of Goddess Rebecca. But it is hard to tell what the effect will be.”

“It can’t be sold?”

“Be cautious.” The always calm Rabbit raised his voice. “This liquid contains the divine power of Goddess Rebecca. You will regret it someday if you decide to sell it. You should treasure it for now.”

“I need a quick source of money.”

“Why?”

“I need enhancement stones.”

“Enhancement stones...”

Rabbit unfolded a gigantic map of the western part of the kingdom. During the past four months, the Overgeared members had adventured and completed this map.

## CHAPTER 228

---

Everything on the map seemed to have a smaller scale. Reidan, marked in the middle of the map, was only the size of a 500 won coin.

‘500 won... A large city that can accommodate 430,000 people is only the size of a 500 won coin...’

It showed how big the west truly was.

The Eternal Kingdom was divided into four regions: the east, west, north and south. However, the size of the four regions wasn’t constant. The west was the largest, followed by the north, east and south.

But this large territory suddenly became a desert. What if he destroyed the giant worms and restored the west? Grid was the next in line to the main power in the north of the Eternal Kingdom. He would be able to establish a unique position.

“Look here.” Rabbit pointed to one side of the map. It was the Hebend River that penetrated through Reidan. “As you can see, the villages and cities are concentrated on the southern basin of the Hebend River.”

Were there survivors in those places? But that didn’t matter.

“What is the reason?”

“...?”

Grid was surprised by Rabbit’s sudden question.

‘Why are the cities and villages concentrated there? Why is he asking me this? How should I know?’

The Grid of the past would’ve expressed his disgruntled thoughts. However, the current Grid was eager to improve his thinking abilities.

“Umm...”

He used his lacking brain to think again. As a result, he barely found an answer. “Is it because of water?”

People needed water to live. It was a simple reason and answer. But it was wrong.

“You’re wrong. Isn’t it also easy to secure water from the north basin? The reason why the population was concentrated on the southern basin in the past was because there was something to attract people there, besides water.”

“What does that mean?”

“It’s the mines. As you can see, there’s a small mountain range, so it’s geographically possible.”

“Mines?”

This was good news. It didn’t matter if it was iron ore, silver or gold. Securing any resources, whether large or small, would unconditionally benefit them. It was good news for Reidan. However.

“I’m glad to hear it, but why are you suddenly talking about mines? It’s just mines. You can take care of it with Lauel. Right now, I need enhancement stones. How did the conversation switch to this?”

‘Indeed... There is this type of response when hearing about the possibility of mines.’

Rabbit realized it clearly. Grid was different from a common lord. He had little interest in his role as a lord.

‘He only devoted himself to working in the smithy for the past four months.’ Some people might blame Grid for being irresponsible. But Rabbit thought about it positively. ‘The duke is right. He might be the best blacksmith and warrior, but he is lacking in knowledge. It’s better for him to stay away from the administration side.’

Despite their lack of political power, there were lords who forcefully tried to control their politics. On the other hand, Grid chose to rely on competent subordinates because he recognized his own deficiencies. He was the ideal lord who knew the limits of what he could do.

‘He is truly wise and wonderful.’

Grid was different from the stupid leader of the Mero Company that Rabbit served in the past.

Rabbit continued the explanation. “The Overgeared members have explored the southern basin to see if there really are mines. But there was a strong boss monster, so the Overgeared members abandoned the exploration and classified it as a danger zone.”

“Which of the Overgeared members went?”

“All of them.”

“What?”

The Overgeared Guild was strong. They were all rankers in the top 40. But despite them acting together, there was a boss monster powerful enough to make them retreat?

‘Is it at the level of the complete Hell Gao?’ Even Grid wasn’t an opponent for the complete version of Hell Gao. He barely managed to defeat Hell Gao after weakening him by taking two fire stones. ‘The current Overgeared members are much stronger...’

Regas was the first member of the Overgeared Guild to obtain his third advancement class. He chose the Asura class. It was a fighting demon that suited his personality. Then Regas went straight to Grid and asked for a duel. It was revenge for losing in the finals of the PvP match. As a result, Grid won.

‘I almost had to use my invincible passive.’

It was a shame, because the duel was after his training period with Piaro. After reaching the third advancement class, Regas was much stronger than before. It was the same for the other Overgeared members. But there was a boss monster in the west that they couldn’t defeat?

‘It is a terrible place.’

Grid clicked his tongue and prompted.

“So? What does that have to do with the enhancement stones?”

“Did you hear the explanation about why I invested more than half of the guild funds into the alchemy institutes?”

“I heard from Lauel. Isn’t the effect of alchemy amazing? It can make various buff potions, as well as assign special options to items.”

“There are many other things that alchemy can do. But most cities avoid investing in alchemy. It is to the point that even the richest cities that represent a kingdom are reluctant concerning alchemy.”

“Why?”

“Because it isn’t certain.”

The effects of items made with alchemy weren’t constant, but often random. Furthermore, the success rate of alchemy itself was extremely low. For example, even if the alchemy institute had the highest level, the probability of producing buff potions is less than 70%, and the probability of successfully giving an option to an item was less than 30%.

In addition, the prices of the materials needed for alchemy were too high. In conclusion, alchemy was a bad investment.

Grid frowned at the explanation. “What is this? Isn’t it complete rubbish?”

2,937,000 gold out of the five million guild funds had been invested in alchemy. Grid felt like he had been hit in the back of his head.

“This man is determined to destroy me!”

Rabbit saw Grid’s expression and explained. “I plan to develop Reidan into the second Talima.”

“Talima? The dwarf city?”

“That’s correct.”

The dwarf city Talima was called the city of heaven. Regardless of the rating, it was said that battle gear with a special performance were widely distributed. Even a small store would have a solid piece of equipment comparable to a unique-rated item, so

many people wanted to go there to purchase battle gear. But it was impossible. Talima was located within the territory of the dragon Trauka, and was a city that humans couldn't enter.

"What if Reidan has items like Talima?"

Certainly, the city would be able to show off a unique presence. People would come from all over the continent to Reidan. Rabbit hoped that day would come, so he encouraged the training of blacksmiths and invested in alchemy.

"Alchemy is a way to make the items produced by you and your blacksmiths shine. I am convinced that the only city on the continent worthy of investing in alchemy is Reidan."

"Hmmm..."

If it developed the way Rabbit wished, a huge economic effect would be created. Grid hoped for that day as well. But.

"Isn't the success rate of alchemy the worst? Can we afford it? What if we have bad luck and become bankrupt instead of becoming the second Talima?"

"Do you remember Administrator Arik?"

"Arik? Ahh, the lord of this place until I was appointed?" Arik was a funny person. The episode related to him was a sight to behold. "Isn't he locked up in prison? What about him?"

"The reason Lauel didn't kill him was to retrieve information about the west from him. I was also able to gain valuable information from him."

"What information?"

"Somewhere in the west, there is a mine for yellow mithril."

"Yellow mithril?"

It was Rabbit's decisive reason for investing in alchemy.

"Yellow mithril is the material for fairy dust. And fairy dust is a raw material that

dramatically increases the chances of alchemy succeeding. I am guessing that there is a yellow mithril mine in the southern basin of the Hebend River.”

“Oh...”

It was a mineral that made it possible to overcome the low success rate of alchemy. Grid was thrilled. The radiant future of Reidan was drawn in his mind and he became excited.

“...By the way, what about the enhancement stones?”

He was still curious about the topic of conversation. Grid finally reached the limits of his patience so Rabbit cut to the chase.

“Enhancement stones can be made with alchemy.”

“...!”

Grid’s eyes widened. He thought enhancement stones only dropped from boss monsters, so he couldn’t help feeling surprised.

“Generally, it is wiser to avoid making enhancement stones because the probability of success is extremely low. But that story will change if we get our hands on fairy dust.”

It was the moment when the reason for Rabbit’s lengthy explanation was revealed.

“So the conclusion is, please go and secure the mine.”

“Okay.”

Grid instantly replied. There was no reason to refuse. The boss monster might be hard for the Overgeared members to raid, but the story would be different if Grid and Noe’s powers were added.

“Then I’ll go immediately.”

Grid was unstoppable once he made a decision. He immediately convened the Overgeared members. The Overgeared members were excited to be raiding with Grid after a long time.

“It’s the first time since the golem invasion.”

“We’ll be able to knock down that monster if we have Grid.”

Grid looked at the Overgeared members and asked them, “What type of monster is it? A demonkin?”

“No, it is a doppelganger.”

“Doppelganger?”

A doppelganger was a monster that copied the form and abilities of the target. They were obviously hard to deal with but...

“Even if he turns into one of us, we have the advantage in numbers. Can’t you easily defeat it?”

Pon explained, “As you said, the doppelganger is easy to deal with if it turns into one of us. But it’s transforming into someone else who is much stronger than us.”

Vantner continued. “It was really incredibly strong. The body is slim and the face is handsome, and he moves quickly while using a sword as big as Dainsleif.”

Regas also spoke. “The way he moves the greatsword reminds me of you, Grid.”

Faker added. “The basic moves are similar to Grid, but the sword techniques are several times better than Grid.”

“Hmmm...”

The opponent was that great? Grid was very curious about the power of the doppelganger that the strongest people in the Overgeared Guild were praising.

‘I will soon see.’

The Overgeared members finished their preparations. Grid commanded, “Depart. Jude, you will protect Reidan along with the soldiers.”

“Yes...”



Jude was disappointed that he couldn't go with them and stepped back.

"I will accompany you."

The continent's strongest swordsman. It was Piaro. However, he was different from before. He was neatly shaved and wearing clean clothes. It was hard to imagine that he was a beggar a few months ago, as he was now giving off a strong impression.

"Please add your strength."

Grid gladly welcomed Piaro, while the Overgeared members were confused.

'Why is he taking a farmer along?'

A farmer was useless in a raid. What role did a farmer have in a raid? Farmers were meant to be in the fields. Lael was about to say something, but stopped.

'That reminds me, isn't Piaro an expert in feng shui?'

Was Grid planning to use Piaro's power to secure useful lands?

'It is surprising. He's so clever... '

Lael embraced the thought that Grid was growing. Grid seemed to be a completely different person than before.

## CHAPTER 229

---

In the National Competition and golem invasion event, Grid proved to be the strongest. But now two months of real time had passed after the golem invasion, so was he still the strongest?

『 I don't think so. 』

『 What's the basis for your claim? 』

『 The performance of a third advancement class is far superior to the second advancement class. It's on a completely different dimension. Most of the top 50 rankers have reached their third advancement class, so Duke Grid, who is immature in control, is no longer unique. 』

『 I agree. Duke Grid overpowered the rankers in the National Competition with his items and class, but now he's lost the advantage of his class. 』

『 What if Grid overcomes his insufficient control skills? 』

『 Haha! The possibility doesn't exist. Looking at it from a professional point of view, Duke Grid has no talent for control. The only advantage he has is his items. 』

『 The advantage will be offset by the fantastic control of the other ranked players. 』

As the information of the third advancement classes started to be revealed one by one, the experts started to criticize Grid. In the first place, Pagma's Descendant wasn't a class specialized in combat. The experts were convinced that the third advancement rankers would be able to show skills well beyond Grid.

At the Second National Competition in Paris nine months later, Grid wouldn't be able to win.

『 Ah, fans of Duke Grid, please don't misunderstand. I'm not disrespecting Grid himself. He is a good leader who has absorbed the Tzedakah Guild, and also have talented people like Huroi, Lauel, Euphemina and Ruby. 』

『 I also know that Duke Grid's blacksmith skills are great. However, we are currently analyzing Duke Grid's combat ability, so we have to criticize it. 』

In fact, Satisfy experts had a grudge against Grid. It was because their analysis of Grid during the National Competition was wrong and they were embarrassed in front of the public.

'It would be nice if Grid's era ends quickly.'

'I don't want to discuss Grid anymore. It's embarrassing every time my analysis is wrong.'

Would these wishes come true?



"Sura Charge!"

*Pepepepeong!*

After converting to an Asura, Regas' combat power was twice as high as a martial artist. The enemy was confused by the punching and kicking changing trajectories, then he would dominate the battlefield by linking lightning and dark skills. The sight of him facing four giant worms simultaneously was excellent.

'He's stronger than when I won the duel. Has he completely adapted to his new class?'

"Nobody can call Regas a Taekwon Master now. Sooner or later, he will be called a war god."

"Yes."

As Grid and Lauel admired him, the spear knight aboard a camel started moving.

*Puk! Puk puk!*

*Rumble!*

*Kiyack!*

A spear knight's attack power increased when riding on a 'mount' such as a horse or pet, so it was a spectacular sight. Even the monsters in the west were unable to cope with his blows. But it was impossible to kill the western monsters in one blow unless they were Grid.

Pon soon faced five giant worms. Was this a crisis? No.

"Gatling Spear."

*Pepeng! Pepepepeng!*

The sonic spear moved several times in a fan-like range. Then the five giant worms became rags and transformed into light.

'Great.'

Gatling Spear exerted a power comparable to Pagma's Swordsmanship, Kill. Unlike the single-target Kill, it was a wide range attack. Grid was filled with admiration.

'I have higher stats than Pon and the performance of Failure is much better than Pon's weapon...'

Nevertheless, the difference in passive skills was too great. Combat classes all had the passive skill of Weapons Mastery, which had the effect of adding attack power. Meanwhile, Grid had a clear limit since he relied exclusively on Pagma's Swordsmanship.

[Pagma's Swordsmanship Lv. 2 (89.9%)]

-When the skill is deactivated-

You can become one with the sword at any time. Increases physical attack by 30%, critical hit rate by 20% and critical damage by 10%.

\* This effect is only applied when a sword type weapon is equipped.

\* The skill consumes no mana.

-When the skill is activated-

Become one with the sword. Wave, Restraint, Link, Kill, Transcend, Transcended

Link and Linked Kill You can unleash a total of seven sword techniques.

- \* The effect of the deactivated skill will be lost.

- \* 20 mana is required to activate the skill.

- \* Once deactivated, it will take 10 seconds until the skill can be activated again. Nothing will be consumed when deactivated.

Pagma's Swordsmanship had a fatal weakness. The effect of the passive skill disappeared when he used an active skill. The effect of a 30% increase in attack power, 20% increase in critical hit rate and 10% increase in critical damage wouldn't be applied to skills like Kill and Link.

'The passive skill only applied to the base damage... This is the limit of the class called Pagma's Descendant.'

But Grid wasn't worried. Rather, he was overflowing with confidence.

'Right now, Regas and Pon's strength might seem comparable to me, but that's only for the moment. That gap will increase again the moment I reach level 300.'

There was an old saying in games that 'levels were bullies.' That saying was also established in Satisfy.

10 stat points were gained every time the level increased, and users would become stronger as their stats increased. It wasn't just because of simple reasons like wearing better items or getting stronger skills, but also due to the unique function of stats.

For example, the strength stat. A level 200 user's strength stat had 0.3 attack power, 7 health points and a weight limit increase of 40 with every point. A level 300 user's strength stat had 0.4 attack power, 9 health points and a weight limit increased of 50 with every point.

In this way, the effect of the stats increased every 100 levels. This was called the stats awakening. The sum of the level 275 Grid's stats were currently higher than the stats of the level 300 Overgeared members. Looking at the total number of stats, Grid's level was nearly 380.

He went through a process called minus level, obtained special titles, and produced countless items. What if Grid reached level 300 and received the third stats awakening?

‘The difference between our passive skills only applies for now.’

The source of Grid’s power was his overwhelming stats. Grid was more familiar with this than anyone else, so he didn’t have to be nervous about the growth of others.

‘If I complete the Grid set then...’

He was the strongest.

“Huhuhu...”

‘Why all of a sudden?’

Grid smiled and Lauel felt a shiver. It was like encountering a monster on the level of a demonkin. Then Huroi shouted.

“My Lord! Seven basilisks are present 800 meters to the south!”

The Overgeared members were nervous.

“Seven basilisks?”

“We should bypass them.”

The respawn rate of the western monsters was unusually fast. If a battle lasted for an extended period of time in one place, they would end up surrounded by monsters. The basilisk was one of the strongest monsters in the west, so it was obvious they would face a crisis if they had to fight seven of them.

“There is a small mountain to the west. It might delay our journey, but we can bypass the monsters.”

“I don’t want to.” Grid ignored Lauel’s advice and grabbed Failure. “I haven’t hunted in 131 days. I will use this opportunity to increase my experience.”

The desert was a harsh terrain. Every time they moved, their feet sank into the sand,

severely limiting their movements. The Overgeared members were experts in combat and already adapted to the desert terrain, but what about Grid?

The Overgeared members were worried. Grid's dull movements and lack of combat sense meant it was impossible for him to exert his full power in the desert. So they were going to move first to clear any monsters they encountered on the journey to their destination.

But what was the truth?

*Jebeok jebeok.*

Grid was armed with heavy boots and walked in the desert like it was a plains area. He even sped up and ran. This was due to the thorough education from Piaro.

"Huh...?"

"What has gotten into Grid...?"

The Overgeared members doubted their eyes.

*Kiyaaak!*

A basilisk noticed a human running over and opened its mouth. Then the light of petrification that also caused great damage flashed. It was a skill that was hard to respond to because the range of the light was wide and fast.

The Overgeared members were sure that Grid would suffer great damage. Grid lacked control skills, so he was always hit by monsters. They thought it would be the same again this time. However.

"Have I only fought you once or twice?"

Grid had moved to Reidan from Patrian. Grid had been taught by Piaro and killed numerous basilisks, so he already predicted this. He was able to accurately estimate the timing of the flash and fired Pagma's Swordsmanship, Wave to offset it. Then he approached the basilisk that was slowed, used Blacksmith's Rage and stabbed the basilisk in its weak eyes.

*Kiyaaaaaah!*

The basilisk struggled from the pain. Suddenly, the six other basilisks surrounded Grid and swung their tails.

“My Lord!”

“Grid!”

The Overgeared members paled. If the six basilisks attacked at the same time, Grid would definitely die. But Grid was already in the rear. He avoided four tails flying from the front, and defended against the other tails using the pavranium.

*Jjeejeeong!*

*Kieek?*

The basilisks were confused at the appearance of the golden blades that blocked their attacks. They felt danger. It was because they saw the black eyes of the human in the gap between the golden blades, looking at them like they were prey.

One of the top predators of the desert was prey? This human was dangerous. The basilisks were instinctively engulfed in fear.

“First one.”

Grid stepped forward towards the basilisk that he had attacked first.

*Teong!*

The heavy weight of Grid’s boots made the desert sand run loose. Then Grid’s greatsword, which had a different power than before, struck the basilisk’s wounded eyes. This wasn’t the end. Grid evaded the basilisk’s subsequent counterattack and triggered Pagma’s Swordsmanship.

The sword followed the movements while he evaded.

“Kill.”

*Peeeeeeong!*

The blue greatsword reminiscent of an ocean predator penetrated the skull of the



basilisk.

*Kuwaaah!*

One of the seven basilisks instantly turned into a grey light. The Overgeared members couldn't close their mouths as they watched.

"Is that Grid?"

The control skills that Grid used at this moment weren't particularly outstanding. Anyone who played the game could show such movements. But who was Grid? He was mocked by everyone for having poor control skills. This person who wasn't talented was taught the skills.

He overcame the weakness in himself.

'Has Grid always been working where we couldn't see him?'

'How much effort did he put in?'

'This is truly my lord! I am proud!'

"No, aren't you going to help me? Aaaaack!"

"..."

While the Overgeared members were feeling thrilled, Grid was becoming bloody due to the other six basilisks. The party window showed that his health gauge was exponentially dropping. The Overgeared members freaked out as they saw it and hurriedly moved to save him.

On the other hand, Piaro observed Grid's battle from beginning to end and clicked his tongue.

"Really, there are no signs of improvement."

Vantner heard Piaro's voice and shook his head.

'This farmer isn't sane either.'

## CHAPTER 230

---

“My Lord! There are 15 cacti in a cluster 400m ahead! It is presumed to be mine cacti in disguise, so pay special attention...”

“Advance and destroy them!”

“My Lord! Two golden toads in the oasis are mating! It is wiser to bypass them...”

“Two field bosses appeared at the same time? This is a jackpot! Charge!”

“My Lord! Dozens of desert toads are chasing us 800m in the rear! We have to speed up or they will catch us...!”

“Do they want revenge for the golden toads? Okay! Stop! We will meet the prey who are willingly coming to us!”

“My Lord... There is a small nest of giant worms below the mountain...”

“Go in and sweep them up!”

“...”

From the sky, Huroi was able to grasp the terrain in advance and discover the enemies. If he depended on his scouting ability as master of a drake, he would be able to minimize their clashes with monsters until they reached their destination.

But who was Grid? He was enthusiastic after not hunting for a long time, so the monsters of the west were destined to be destroyed. If Huroi discovered an enemy, Grid rushed in, rather than avoiding it. Due to that, the Overgeared members became tired.

“Pant pant! Damn, doesn’t Grid get tired?”

“I feel it every time, but Grid’s stamina is much higher than we think.”

“Uhh... It’s unbearably hot.”

It was very hard to march through the desert. The Overgeared members were top rankers, but they were also users. Due to the repeated battles and heat, their stamina was quickly depleted. On the other hand, Grid was fine. His stamina was twice as high as the Overgeared members thanks to his persistence stat, which he raised through labor and blacksmith work.

‘No matter how strong the monsters in the west are, fields bosses have obvious limits.’

Field bosses were weaker than quest bosses or dungeon bosses, and their item drop rate was also low. Grid and the Overgeared members hunted one large cactus and two golden toads, but only obtained two epic items and five enhancement stones.

As Grid was feeling disappointment, “River!”

“We’ve finally arrived!”

The group arrived at the Hebend River. It was only 10 hours from Reidan. If they fully exploited Huroi’s scouting ability, they would’ve been able to arrive within three hours. However, Grid made their journey at least three times longer.

“Grid, all the guild members are tired. It’s late at night, so why don’t we take a break?” Pon suggested.

Grid checked the status of the Overgeared members.

“I understand. Get ready to camp.”

Stamina recovery was slow outdoors. Meals and simple rest weren’t sufficient, so it was better to take a short nap. The Overgeared members gathered near the river and pulled out a tents from the inventory. They were impressed when they saw Grid setting up his. It was because Grid’s setting up skill wasn’t ordinary.

“Wow, isn’t this great? It is the first time I’ve seen someone build a tent as quickly as Grid.”

“Has he set up a lot of tents in reality? Does he go camping often?”

‘What camping...’

Grid didn’t have any friends to go camping with. The reason why Grid’s tent building

skill was so good was because he was thoroughly trained in the army. Grid had over 3,000 dexterity points, so he could set up a tent several times faster than ordinary users.

Were there any advantages to building a tent quickly? No. It wouldn't be helpful in reality unless he had a lover to go on a camping trip with.

"Let's eat."

Once the setting up of tents was complete, the Overgeared members sat down in front of a fire. The food they prepared was common. It was the rainbow potato, the only food currently grown in Reidan.

"I'm sick of eating this for every meal."

"I agree."

The rainbow potato had seven flavors. The red portion had a meat flavor, the yellow portion was fried shrimp flavor, the orange portion was tangerine sauce, and so on. It had a soft, strong or delicious taste, but in the end, it was just a potato. Basically, it was hard because they had to eat this for every meal.

"It would be nice if we had a good chef."

In the case of a chef with high cooking skills, it was possible to make food using wild grasses and monsters. In addition, the dishes would give a small buff so it was a very useful ability.

'Euphemina can duplicate the cooking skill... '

Euphemina wasn't included in this raid. Currently, she was making a great contribution to the security and internal affairs development of Reidan by duplicating skills like the monster taming, blacksmithing, alchemy, building, etc. It was too much to rely on her for cooking as well, so Grid shook his head.

'We can't always depend on Euphemina.'

She might leave the guild. In fact, there was a limit to relying on only one person, so Grid decided that it was better to recruit users with various secondary classes like chefs.

“Now my eyes are tired.”

“What should we do?”

The guild members finished their meal. Grid rose from his spot and proclaimed, “Leave the lookout position to me. Everybody, you should get a good sleep.”

Grid had matured and was now sacrificing himself for his colleagues. But the Overgeared members refused.

“Grid is the core power of this raid group. You can’t overdo it.”

“Don’t worry. I’m still okay because I have a lot of stamina.”

“It isn’t enough just to be okay. You have to be well prepared. The opponent is strong.”

In the end, Grid was excluded from being on guard and the members started to consult among themselves. The scheduled break was four hours. In the meantime, eight people should stand guard in intervals of 30 minutes.

“The eight people with the highest stamina stat will have to sacrifice 30 minutes.”

Every time.

The higher the stamina stat, the higher the maximum stamina and the quicker the recovery speed. Therefore, the guard positions were always taken by the tankers. Vantner and Toban groaned.

“I’m tired of being a tanker all day long...”

“A tanker is a sinner.”

It might be a reasonable method, but the tankers couldn’t help complaining. Lael watched them and made a wise suggestion.

“Why doesn’t Piaro stand guard?”

On the way here. It was obvious but Piaro didn’t take part in any battles. He just had to walk. Lael guessed that Piaro still had a lot of stamina left.

‘A legendary farmer should have high basic stats... A four hour guard shift shouldn’t be a huge burden to him.’

Piario readily nodded at Lauel’s suggestion. “I understand. Leave it to me and get a good night’s sleep.”

“Ohh!”

The faces of the Overgeared members brightened. They didn’t know why Piario participated in this raid, but they were delighted that he was here. However, some people showed negative reactions.

“This is a danger zone, so we shouldn’t leave the guard position to a farmer.”

“That’s right. What if monsters hide in the fog at dawn and attack? A farmer wouldn’t be able to detect the attack of a monster, so we will be vulnerable to danger.”

‘They don’t know the honor it is to have a great swordsman standing guard... ’

Grid found this situation hilarious. How long would they mistake Piario for a farmer? It was interesting to watch since he knew the truth. He smiled and settled the situation. “You shouldn’t doubt Piario’s ability to be a lookout. Don’t you know that he is a legendary farmer, not an ordinary farmer?”

“...?”

The Overgeared members were confused.

“Why should a legendary farmer be good at being a lookout?”

“Explain it so that we can understand.”

“...”

Grid was stressed because the members asked for clarification. It was impossible to give a convincing explanation since it was just a thoughtless remark that he spoke.

At that moment, Lauel made a guess. “Farmers have to protect their fields from ice, beasts and monsters. A legendary farmer should have an excellent ability to defend his fields, meaning that his ability to sense beasts and monsters is sharp. This is the

reason why Grid told us to trust the legendary farmer.”

“That’s right.”

Grid agreed with Lauel’s interpretation. The Overgeared members with a negative reaction started to understand.

“I see... Farmers have this ability...”

“Okay then. Piaro, please work hard for four hours. It is a request.”

The Overgeared members entered their tents. Pon was the last one to enter and he spoke to Piaro.

“There is a huge monster that lives in Hebend River. It’s extremely powerful, unlike the golden toads that we hunted during the day. If it emerges, let us know without any delay.”

“Yes.”

Pon finally entered his tent. Piaro sat in front of a campfire alone and recalled the past.

‘It reminds me of my days as a knight.’

During his time in the Red Knights, they went on many expeditions and set up campsites. At that time, he was with his colleagues. But due to Asmophel’s false accusation, they were all dead.

*Tadak. Tak.*

“...”

Piaro was organizing the branches for the campfire when he suddenly shifted his gaze to the river. It was early dawn. Something was moving silently in the fog. It was hard to detect even by the most skilled person. But who was Piaro? It was extremely rare that anything could succeed in an ambush in front of a great swordsman.

“You are the monster of Hebend River.”

Piaro threw the branch he was holding into the river. As he threw it into the river,

something let out a sharp scream.

On this day. The top predator of the Hebend River for the last decade met its end.



“Okay, perfect.”

Grid and the Overgeared members slept for four hours and recovered enough stamina. They ate a rainbow potato and moved straight to their destination. They finally reached the edge of the mountains after passing through large and small ghost villages.

Grid and the Overgeared members no longer encountered monsters. Grid was puzzled by the bamboo forest that stretched along the mountain path.

“How was this forest preserved without being turned into a desert? Is this place safe from the giant worms?”

Lauel explained. “The doppelganger here blocks the path of monsters as well as humans. Thanks to it, this forest and the mine in the mountains behind it are safely preserved.”

“Hmmm...”

It was a strange phenomenon where a monster defended the land from another monster. Grid felt great interest as he stepped into the bamboo forest. At that moment.

[You have entered the mysterious forest.]

[Your mind has become calm.]

[You will be helpless in the midst of this tranquility.]

[You have resisted.]

“Ugh...! This feeling is so disgusting.”



“I just want to sleep.”

With the exception of Grid, the Overgeared members were overcome by the helpless feeling. Their bodies became limp and they had pained expressions on their faces. On the other hand, Grid kept moving forward and was astonished.

“...Pagma?”

The center of the forest where bamboo soared into the sky. One man was sitting on a flat rock. He had an egg-shaped face on a slender body. White skin and red lips. His long eyes that were smiling. He gave off such a beautiful and neat impression that it was hard to believe he was a man. He looked exactly like Pagma, who Grid had seen depicted on the murals at Loran Falls.

*Suuk.*

Pagma sat quietly on the rock and slowly moved. The silk clothes that seemed to come from the Joseon Era flapped as he moved and shifted his gaze towards Grid. The look in those eyes contained outright hostility.

## CHAPTER 231

---

The moment he locked eyes with Pagma.

*Duguen!*

Grid stiffened and his heart beat faster. His eyes shook as sweat started running down his body. It was a phenomenon of fear that transcended tension and agitation. Was he overwhelmed by the killing intent that Pagma was emitting?

No.

This was sheer instinct. The source of all his abilities was Pagma, so he couldn't help feeling awe and a sense of smallness when facing Pagma.

'Wake up.' Grid sobered up. 'This guy is just a doppelganger of Pagma. Don't be misled by appearances.'

The name that floated above his head wasn't Pagma, but 'Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest.' Grid confirmed this again and barely controlled his mind. After a moment, his composure was restored.

'It will be hard.' Who would've expected that the target of the raid would be Pagma's doppelganger? 'I never even imagined it.'

Looking back at it now, the features described by the Overgeared members resembled Pagma. But hadn't Pagma died more than 100 years ago? It was virtually impossible to imagine that the present doppelganger could copy a person from so long ago.

"..."

The staring battle between Grid and the doppelganger continued. There were all types of complex emotions and doubts in Grid's eyes, while the doppelganger only contained hostility towards the enemy.

It was clear that this situation couldn't be contained. The doppelganger attacked Grid first. He lightly swung a jade green greatsword in his hand.

*Chaaeng!*

“Kuk!”

Grid blocked the descending greatsword with Failure. The destructive power behind the blow was beyond imagination. The attack power was comparable to Hell Gao who was in a perfect condition.

“Lauel! A doppelganger copies the appearance of the target. But can it completely copy their abilities as well?” He hurriedly asked.

Lauel shook his head. “There are limits to a doppelganger’s ability to copy. It can’t fully copy the ability of a person stronger than itself.”

It meant that the doppelganger wasn’t as strong as Pagma, who was the greatest swordsman after Muller. In other words, the doppelganger in front of Grid was an unfinished product that couldn’t completely copy Pagma’s power.

However.

*Jjejejeok!*

“Crazy...!”

Bottom, side, top. The doppelganger showed off a dazzling skill with the greatsword, with barely a time difference in each strike. This drove Grid back.

[The durability of the +9 Failure has decreased by 3.]

[The durability of the +9 Failure has decreased by 8.]

‘What is this?’

Even the performance of the weapon was great. It was the first time he saw a weapon that could damage the durability of Failure so quickly. If the durability of Failure was compromised, it meant that the doppelganger’s weapon dealt twice the damage.

“Lauel! What about the doppelganger’s ability to copy items?”

The material that made up a doppelganger was so flexible that it reproduced human hair and skin, even tears and blood.

“Depending on its strength, it can exert a strength comparable to orichalcum. Due to this, most items reproduced by doppelgangers are known to perform better than the original.”

It was impossible to completely copy the works of the legendary blacksmith, Pagma. The greatsword used by the doppelganger was obviously below the level of the original.

‘Nevertheless, it can deal such damage to Failure?’

Grid’s pride was crushed. He had been trying so hard for the two years since becoming Pagma’s Descendant, but he couldn’t even be compared to Pagma’s copy?

*Chaaeng! Chaeng!*

Grid’s sword became increasingly dull due to his agitation. On the other hand, the sword of the doppelganger was as sharp as ever, since his emotions never changed.

*Chukak.*

“...Uh!”

Grid finally started to become injured. Red blood stained his clothing. The flow of battle was heading towards Grid’s defeat.

“Quickly help Grid...!”

The Overgeared members were nervous. They wanted to go out and help Grid right away. But it was difficult to take a step because they were still caught by the feeling of helplessness. This helpless feeling was so strong that they wouldn’t be able to move their fingertips unless their survival instincts were invoked.

“We have to hope that Grid will survive until the doppelganger attacks us...”

“But look at this. Isn’t the doppelganger’s swordsmanship extremely similar to Grid’s swordsmanship?”

“That’s right. I wasn’t sure before, but now that they are side by side, the two sword styles look exactly the same.”

“It can’t be...”

The Overgeared members figured out the doppelganger’s identity. To be precise, it was the identity of the person that the doppelganger copied. However, the weight of that name wasn’t light, so they couldn’t express it with their mouths.

On the other hand, Lael had no such obstacles. “It seems to be Pagma, as everyone is thinking.”

“...”

Pagma. One of the nine legends and the source of Grid’s strength. But now. As a result of the golem invasion, Grid encountered Pagma’s doppelganger in the west.

What did this suggest?

“Through this raid, Grid will go through a big change. He will acquire new skills, quests or items and he will develop dramatically. The reason why the king appointed Grid as lord of Reiden is due to Satisfy’s arrangements for Pagma’s Descendant.”

Lael looked at it from a very positive perspective. It was the same for the other Overgeared members.

*Teong!*

Meanwhile, Grid defended against the onslaught of the doppelganger and he couldn’t retreat as the bamboo forest blocked the exit. There was no place to back off anymore, so he could only counterattack.

“Damn! Let’s try it once!”

How long was he going to be pushed by Pagma’s clone, who wasn’t even Pagma? The moment when Grid was about to use Pagma’s Swordsmanship.

“Stop!” The silent Piaro suddenly shouted. Grid was surprised and stopped.

“...”

The doppelganger's sword had slashed through the spot where Grid was about to move to. If Grid had used Pagma's Swordsmanship, his heart would've been pierced by that greatsword.

*Gulp.*

Grid swallowed his dry saliva as Piaro scolded him.

"Why aren't you calm? Watch the opponent. The difference between him and you isn't great. There is no reason for it to be so one-sided."

The difference wasn't great? Wasn't his attack speed and attack power twice as high as Grid's? Piaro gave the confused Grid a hint. "Just as he knows your swordsmanship, don't you also know his swordsmanship? If so, can't you cope?"

"..."

If it was four months ago, Grid would've found it hard to understand Piaro's advice. But now it was different. Grid had steadily developed thinking skills in his everyday life. As a result, he was able to use Piaro's advice as perfect nourishment.

'That's right. That guy's swordsmanship is based on Pagma.' A stabbing attack contained the simplified footwork of Kill while a slash had the simplified footwork of Link. 'If I watch his foot movements, I can predict his next attack.'

Again, let's do it properly. Grid took a deep breath. In this gap, the doppelganger had taken two steps forward. It was the footwork of Link. A slashing attack. But would it be horizontal or vertical? If it was horizontal, would it come from the right or left side?

'Read the enemy's gaze and shoulder motions.'

He recalled Piaro's teachings. Then.

'The right!'

The movement was seen. Grid succeeded in detecting and avoiding the doppelganger's sword, despite it moving twice as fast as him. It was a very good move, impressing everyone watching.

'He listened to the advice of the farmer and...'

‘He grew in real time?’

‘What is going on?’

The eyes of the Overgeared members’ widened. Their gazes turned towards Piaro. Piaro was standing with folded arms. It was the opposite of the members who were filled with the helpless feeling.

‘It can’t be...?’

He wasn’t just a farmer? It was when the Overgeared members were starting to realize Piaro’s identity.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Link!”

*Pipit! Pipipipit!*

Dozens of blue-white energy blades were created. Did it shatter the body of the doppelganger? It failed. The doppelganger completely blocked Grid’s attack using the same technique.

*Chaeeeeeng!*

“Ohh!”

The blue-white blades and the jade blades collided together, causing the bamboo to shake from the force. The Overgeared members watched with amazement and awe.

“Kill!”

Grid used another skill to not lose his momentum. However, once again, the doppelganger reacted with the same technique to neutralize Grid’s attack.

*Peeeeeeong!*

The collision between Kill and Kill caused a powerful explosion. The center of the forest was destroyed because it couldn’t cope with the explosion. The rock where the doppelganger first sat was shattered and the fragments scattered everywhere, injuring the Overgeared members.

“How about this?”

Grid used a fusion skill. This skill was based on his own experience, so he thought the doppelganger wouldn't have this skill.

“Transcended Link!”

A total of 20 strikes that dealt 180% physical damage was shot out with no time difference. It was a merciless bombardment that even turned an ancient weapon to rags, so Grid didn't doubt its power. However, the doppelganger coped by using a skill that Grid didn't know yet.

“Revolve.”

“...?!”

Grid and the Overgeared members' eyes widened. The doppelganger moved the jade sword in a half moon and absorbed all the energy of Transcended Link, while a vortex appeared around the doppelganger? This wasn't the end.

*Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!*

The energy of Transcended Link that was sucked into the vortex reappeared. At the same time, it reversed course and aimed for Grid. It was a perfect counterattack.

“Grid!”

“My Lord!”

The 20 energy blades moved through the bamboo forest in a zigzag, heading towards Grid. The Overgeared members were certain that Grid would die. But Piaro didn't allow it. He suddenly appeared in front of Grid and pulled out his sword. Then he struck the blue-white energy blades one by one.

*Kwang!*

Two.

*Kwang!*



Three.

*Kwa kwang!*

Four.

*Kwa kwa kwang!*

In turn, he blocked all 20 blows.

“...”

The Overgeared members and Grid couldn't believe the sight that was in front of them.

‘Blowing away my Transcended Link like hitting a baseball...? Was Piaro this strong?’

‘No... What the hell is this farmer?’

As an awkward silence flowed, Piaro stepped back and urged Grid. “Fight again from the beginning. Absorb the techniques in Pagma’s Swordsmanship that you don’t know and make them your own. Then you will become stronger.”

Piaro had figured out the identity of the doppelganger with the second blow that Grid and the doppelganger exchanged. However, he didn’t step forward because he judged there was no value in it.

‘This is a great stepping stone for Duke Grid.’

The private lessons of the continent’s greatest swordsman, the second stage began.

## CHAPTER 232

---

The doppelganger couldn't completely reproduce Pagma's power in its entirety. Nevertheless, its stats were equivalent to Hell Gao. Since Grid had a tendency to rely entirely on skills, it was natural that he was completely defeated in the first battle after Pagma's Swordsmanship was blocked.

This horrific monster...

'Fight again?'

Grid was unwilling. Wouldn't the result be the same even if they fought a few times? He would be much more comfortable if Piaro went out and took care of it. But he quickly fixed that idea.

'Piaro said to absorb Pagma's Swordsmanship. Yes, this is a chance to become stronger.'

More and more strength. He needed enough strength to do the things he had to do.

"Sigh..."

Grid hesitated before taking a deep breath.

*Kuoooh!*

The doppelganger stabbed forward. The attack was deafening, and despite being 5m away, seemed like it would reach his stomach.

Piaro exclaimed from behind him. "There are obviously limits to a greatsword. It's big, dull and hard to move on the fly. The stabbing of a greatsword is extremely simple, and can easily be seen. Don't worry about hidden weapons and block."

It was convincing advice. Grid's confidence was elevated and he moved calmly. Utilizing the footwork of Link to move left and right, he avoided the doppelganger's stab.

*Kudududuk!*

The jade greatsword passed by the side of the Holy Light Armor. Sparks scattered like firecrackers and the doppelganger could be seen beyond them.

“Once the stab misses, a gap will be exposed. This is an opportunity to hit back.”

A greatsword was big and heavy. What if the greatsword was stabbed but didn’t hit the target? The person holding the greatsword would lose their balance and their posture would collapse.

“Okay!”

Grid smiled with satisfaction as he counterattacked. His greatsword curved from the bottom up and aimed for the doppelganger’s heart.

*Seokeok!*

It was avoided. The doppelganger demonstrated his agility by twisting his upper body to avoid being hit. However, the front of his clothing was loosened, clearing revealing the doppelganger’s upper body.

“Kyaaak!”

Laella, a member of the party, let out a sound of appreciation. The doppelganger copied Pagma’s appearance and was so beautiful that he caught her heart instantly. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that the sleek muscular body was the creation of a god. But the body wasn’t an important factor in battle. Only the strong would win.

“Ohhhh!”

Failure passed over the doppelganger’s head and once again descended.

*Sukakak!*

Heavy. Grid took full advantage of Grid’s boots, so the weight at the end of his sword was incomparable to before. He could even easily disintegrate a rock. Could the doppelganger withstand it?

Of course, it was possible. This doppelganger had been a named boss of the Mysterious Forest for at least 100 years. Apart from its stats, its health would be in the millions.

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 17,790 damage to the target.]

‘Indeed, there isn’t a single scratch on him.’

Grid was dismayed when he saw that the doppelganger’s health gauge didn’t seem to decrease at all. Then the jade greatsword aimed at Grid’s side.

‘Ah!’

A chill went down Grid’s spine.

*Jeeeong!*

The seven golden blades moved to protect Grid. They combined into one to form a barrier that defended against the greatsword. But they couldn’t fully absorb the shock and became stuck in place.

Piario spoke again. “The biggest disadvantage of a greatsword is that it will take a long time to recover the weapon after an attack. You forgot this point and allowed a counterattack.”

Then what should he do?

*Jjejeong! Jjang!*

As Grid was confused, the momentum of the doppelganger rose again. He started an endless onslaught and didn’t allow time for Grid to take any countermeasures. The pavranium moved to protect Grid, but there was a limit since it stiffened every time.

“The opponent’s behavior is correct. You should do it as well. If you take advantage of the recoil that occurs when you attack, you can link more strikes.”

“Urgh...!”

Grid felt the need to stop the doppelganger’s attacks. If so, he should evade rather than defend. In fact, Piario had advised ‘don’t play around when you have a sword in your

hand.' However, the enemy's attack speed was much faster than Grid's attack speed, so it wasn't easy to react.

Then what should he do? Grid finally allowed an attack and the next blow aimed for his neck. Then.

*Teong!*

Piario stepped forward again. He blocked the doppelganger's sword and saved Grid's life once again.

"Why do you only use the golden blades as a defense tool? Optimize your control and use them as weapons if possible. Now fight again."

"..."

After that.

The same thing was repeated many times. Grid listened to Piario's advice, dealt with the doppelganger and when faced with death from an error, he was saved by Piario.

Grid felt like he was in a game room.

'Just when I think the game is over, the neighborhood boy will put in another coin.'

In fact, he had never met such a good person.

"If you have an opponent with higher health, you must go all out on attack instead of defense. Fight again."

"The technique of lifting from the bottom to the top is inevitably weaker because the force is countered by gravity. You might be using this technique to damage the enemy, but it is actually having an adverse effect. In the first place, is it possible with such a huge weapon? Fight again."

"Don't neglect the golden blades just because they can't kill the enemy. If you make them persevere to cover the enemy's view, they can be a bigger help than a few colleagues. Fight again."

"I explained why stabbing a greatsword is a simple technique, but I don't know why

you are so obsessed with it. You should only stab in a situation where you can definitely knock your opponent away. You should know that the greatsword is designed for both stabbing and slashing. Don't forget to use the right greatsword technique when appropriate. Fight again."

"Again."

"Fight again!"

"Again! Again! Again!"

"...Pant pant."

How many times did he need to repeat this damn battle? It hadn't been dawn when they arrived here in the bamboo forest but now the sun was high in the sky. Grid was mentally and physically exhausted.

On the other hand, the Overgeared members...

"Yum yum. Grid is suffering a lot."

"The strongest NPC is teaching him swordsmanship and protecting his life, so how is he suffering? I would be excited."

"It's exciting, but hard."

"Is it easy to fight for over half a day?"

"Indeed... If I was continuously fighting against the enemy like Grid, my stamina would've reached its limit already."

The Overgeared members were already freed from the helpless feeling and were eating in front of a campfire. They baked and boiled the rainbow potatoes, relaxing as they watched Grid fight.

It wasn't because they were lazy. The Overgeared members also had a desire to join the raid. Growing through struggles was the joy they desired. But they couldn't move. Piaro was training Grid against Pagma's doppelganger, so there was no room for them to intervene.

“Anyway, Grid’s growth rate is remarkable.” Lael remarked.

The Overgeared members agreed.

“That’s right. It’s a tremendous growth.”

The doppelganger had completely overwhelmed Grid in the first battle. He was attacked without being able to hit back once, and faced the crisis of death. In the second battle, Grid managed to strike once. The third battle, it was two attacks and the fourth battle, three attacks and so on. And in the 51st battle, Grid was exchanging blows at a level comparable to the doppelganger. It was especially impressive the way he avoided death every time.

“Grid is a blank slate. It’s obvious if he grows even a little bit.”

The synergy of the best teacher and best sparring partner (?) raised Grid’s control. What user wouldn’t want to experience something like this? The Overgeared members really envied Grid.

“I wish I had a mentor like that...”

“How did Grid obtain such a great NPC?”

“It’s creepy that he was doing a farmer cosplay for a while.”

What was Piaro’s identity? And what circumstances were there that led him to teach Grid? It happened when the Overgeared members’ questions were deepening.

“Sob...!”

Grid eventually collapsed. His stamina was completely depleted. On the other hand, the doppelganger was still fine. Grid had fought for half a day, but the doppelganger’s health was still at 9/10ths.

Piario stopped him from finishing off Grid and turned his gaze to the Overgeared members. Then he pointed to Regas.

“You there.”

“Huh? Me?”

Regas felt irritated when he saw that Grid was getting stronger and trained alone. He imagined Pagma's doppelganger as a virtual enemy in his mind, and started sparring against it. Therefore, he was stunned when Piaro suddenly pointed him out.

Piaro instructed. "You will deal with this enemy while Duke Grid is resting."

Regas' eyes shone like jewels. "Are you going to train me?"

Piaro didn't deny it. "I have been watching your potential from a distance."

"Ohh...!"

Regas was jubilant. It was an opportunity to be trained by Piaro, who was stronger than anyone he knew. Piaro started the lesson as soon as he came running.

"Wow."

"What is this...? That NPC will teach anyone?"

"Amazing! We can receive his teachings?"

The Overgeared members were excited. They expected to become stronger after being taught by Piaro. And that expectation became reality.

"Next."

Piaro switched the members in turn and allowed them to spar against Pagma's doppelganger. He also developed the Overgeared members by pointing out the strengths and weaknesses that he had observed while staying in Reidan. It was in the hope that they would become stronger and make him stronger.

The great swordsman Piaro would be a great fortune to Grid and the Overgeared members.



## CHAPTER 233

---

It was well into dawn.

The Mysterious Forest, which looked like the landscape of an Oriental painting, had long been devastated.

“ ”  
...

Dark blue paint smeared the sky. A man was standing with flames behind him. He had black hair that was thicker than silk and his white skin was dusty and scarred.

*Suuk.*

Dozens of enemies were reflected in the lonely eyes. The humans fell down, got up, and fell down again. It wanted to kill them so they couldn't fight again, but it wasn't easy.

They were getting stronger over time, and there was an excellent human who protected them. He probably showed half the strength of my original master. I couldn't do anything because he easily overwhelmed me.

How long could I hold on?

In the past, a human army came. One day there were countless monsters. I had defended this forest from all types of beings for a long time, but this was my first moment of great crisis. But I soon calmed my mind.

‘I...’

I had to defend it. She was on the hill beyond this forest. She was the only one who didn't hate me, when I could do nothing but imitate the image of others. I didn't remember the last time I saw her, but her warmth was still vivid. I wouldn't let these intruders make it through this forest to ruin her happiness.

“Pagma's Swordsmanship.”

One of the humans spoke a familiar technique. It was the same technique used by my

original master. It wasn't hard to cope with. I also used the same technique. I was much faster at using the technique than the human, so it was a simple matter.

However.

“...?”

The human's movements changed in the middle. The footwork suddenly changed from Kill to Link.

“Kill.”

“Link!”

The man dodged Kill and fired dozens of energy blades.

*Pit! Pipipipit!*

I couldn't deal with the dozens of energy blades alone. In other words, blood spurted from the body of Pagma's doppelganger. One fifth of my health gauge was lost at once. The human was excited after succeeding in the attack.

“How is it? You were tricked? Isn't it amazing? Eh?”

Grid. It was his 83rd showdown with the doppelganger. He changed sword techniques in the middle, and had now become a clever warrior. A brave warrior.

“Wonderful.” Piaro praised him. Piaro truly felt admiration.

‘The journey from Patrian to Reidan...’

Piaro had seen that Grid's talent was already facing limitations. Grid was so clueless that he was deemed virtually impossible to teach. But now there was a good teaching material. That's right, it was Pagma's doppelganger. Pagma's abilities might not be completely copied, but the doppelganger was far superior to Grid.

Piaro gave directions to Grid. As the battle with the doppelganger continued, Grid gained enlightenment and grew.

‘The mentor gives their student a glimpse of the bowl, a good opponent strips off the

limits, and an ideal opponent makes them forget about the limits.'

Those were his master's words. An ideal opponent. Piaro also wanted to find it. Just like the current Grid.

"Grr...!"

Pagma's doppelganger made a sound. He emitted an immensely strong killing intent. He showed extreme survival instincts now that his life was in danger.

"From now on, it is the real battle. Duke Grid, I wish you the best."

"Yes."

After receiving Piaro's encouragement, Grid stepped forward with confidence. The doppelganger aimed an entirely new technique at him.

"Pinnacle."

Pagma's Swordsmanship, it was made up of skills that dealt additional damage in proportion to physical damage. In addition, most of them were non-targeted skills and often missed. But Pinnacle was different. It was a targeted skill and had an additional option of ignoring the enemy's defense. The range of movement was proportional to the length of the weapon.

*Kwachak!*

It was the culmination. It was an attack that was impossible for Grid to respond to.

"Kuaaaaak!"

Holy Light Armor. It was the ultimate armor made by the legendary blacksmith Pagma out of the god mineral, adamantium. But it couldn't boast a complete defense in front of Pinnacle. Grid fell down while Piaro was amazed by the manifestation of an amazing sword technique.

'Pagma! The more I see your swordsmanship, the more I want to meet you, not the fake ones...!'

A blacksmith, but also a master of the sword. The sword technique that could separate

the sky and the mountains. Indeed, the best swordsman after Sword Saint Muller...

‘They are stronger than my current self!’

Piaro resented that he was born in this age. Why couldn’t he be born in the same time as Muller and Pagma? If he had lived under the same sky as them, he would’ve been able to stand shoulder to shoulder with them eventually.

However, there were no such people in the present age. He was alone and stagnant. The moment that Piaro was lamenting this,

“...Kuk, okay.” A pale green light flashed around Grid’s bloody body. “It was good that I managed to wear Doran’s Ring in advance.”

Grid said as he got up. His appearance was normal. The huge wound on Grid’s chest disappeared without a trace, and there were no other signs of injuries. The power of items. The healing of Doran’s Ring was amplified by the Holy Light Armor, completely restoring Grid’s health.

“What...?”

Piaro was shaken. Even a legendary Saintess couldn’t completely heal a dying person all at once, let alone Grid, who wasn’t a Saintess.

*Ttuduk! Ttuduk!*

Grid stretched his body. He prepared for a new strike.

“I can learn it as well.”

Pagma’s Swordsmanship usually consisted of three to seven steps of footwork. It was extremely simple, but it was possible to unfold the ultimate swordsmanship with this simplicity. It was difficult to imitate Pagma’s Swordsmanship, and it was impossible to activate even if it was imitated.

But it was possible for Grid. He could make Pagma’s Swordsmanship his own, just by looking. How was it possible when he had no talent?

The reason was simple. He was Pagma’s Descendant. For that reason alone, Grid had managed to learn Pagma’s Swordsmanship after looking at the murals. But now there

was a person to teach him the forms of Pagma's Swordsmanship directly. It was optimal.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship!"

*Teong!*

The heavy weight of Grid's boots shook the ground. Grid expressed the essence of a warrior god with this sword technique.

"Pinnacle."

[You have learned a new skill.]

[Pinnacle Lv. 1]

A sword that expresses the essence of a warrior god.

Deals 700% of your attack power to a single target. This skill will ignore 60% of the target's armor.

Skill Usage Conditions: Have a sword type weapon equipped.

Skill Mana Cost: 750

Skill Cooldown Time: 3 minutes.

It was an intermediate skill between Kill and Link. It also consumed much less mana and had a shorter cooldown than Kill. The important thing was that it was a targeted skill, unlike Link or Kill. If this skill had been recorded in the murals at Loran Falls, the past Grid would've found it much easier to raise his level.

*Kuoooh!*

Failure moved in a half moon shape. The slash covered Pagma's doppelganger. But the doppelganger was already prepared.

"Revolve."

A counterattack used at the perfect timing. Pinnacle was caught by the vortex and returned to Grid. The energy blade faced Grid. Could he afford to endure this attack now that Doran's Ring was on cooldown?

No.

“Revolve.”

[Revolve Lv. 1]

Like the eye of a storm, it is calm and powerful.

It will return all attacks that hit it within 0.5 seconds of casting with 100% of the power.

Skill Usage Conditions: Have a sword type weapon equipped.

Skill Mana Cost: 2,000

Skill Cooldown Time: 2 minutes.

“...!”

The Overgeared members were exhausted after fighting the doppelganger while Grid was resting. Their eyes watching the battlefield became wide with shock. Piaro was the same.

‘This is impossible!’

Everyone was shocked. Yesterday and today, Grid's control abilities had made a breakthrough, but they didn't think it was at the level of counterattacking at the perfect timing.

Counterattacking was a difficult technique to do. It was necessary to use the technique in the right place and at the right time to neutralize the enemy's attack. It was a technique that wasn't easy to use without making a lot of effort.

But Grid had succeeded. He reacted to a counterattack with a counterattack. This meant he had predicted the behavior of the enemy. Grid's growth level exceeded

everyone's predicted range.

*Seokeok!*

[The +9 Failure's option effect is activated, causing the skill 'Bisect' to be generated.]

[The +9 Failure's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[The Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 1,375,900 damage to the target.]

The doppelganger's right arm was cut off. The jade sword was separated from its master and fell to the ground. Grid's eyes became sharper than ever.

'If you catch a chance at victory, link the attack!'

Piara's cry that he heard yesterday rang loudly in his ears.

"Ohhhhhh!"

As the doppelganger was struggling with losing one arm and his sword, Grid used a skill. It was a skill that surpassed Transcended Link. Linked Kill.

*Kwachak!*

A shark, the predator that ruled the world's oceans for 415 million years! Failure tore at the body of the doppelganger in succession. One time! Two times! Three times! Four times! Five times! Six times! Seven times!

[Critical!]

[Critical!]

[Critical!]

[Critical!]

[All of your stamina has been depleted due to the maximum number of Linked Kill blows being triggered.]

[Your stamina will fall to 0 and you can't move.]

“Ugh...!”

Grid's vision blurred. He tried to hold on but eventually collapsed like a puppet whose strings were cut. Then notification windows appeared in his vision.

[You have defeated the Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest that has existed for 153 years.]

[8,450,109 experience has been acquired.]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired 6,300 gold.]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired the Guardian's Necklace.]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired the Guardian's Bracelet.]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired the Doppelganger's Greatsword.]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired 13 weapon enhancement stones...]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired 15 armor enhancement stones...]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired 4 blessed weapon enhancement stones...]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired 6 blessed armor enhancement stones...]

[Your level has risen.]

“Hah... Haha...”

When he checked the time, he had been fighting for 23 hours and 21 minutes. In the



meantime, Grid had been defeated 82 times and the Overgeared members had tasted at least 10 defeats. But in the end, the battle was their victory.

Grid laughed. He couldn't lift a finger, so he just lay on the cold dirt floor and laughed. He had gone beyond his limits, so an unexplained pleasure gripped him. The Overgeared members ran to him.

"My Lord! Great!"

"Grid! You were really cool!"

"Grid! You are such a great guy! Hahat! Puhahahat!"

Laughter echoed in the Mysterious Forest, which had been filled with screams for a long time. Pagma's doppelganger couldn't help smiling as he heard it.

Memories of the past came to mind. The pure laughter in her childhood. The sharp laughter when she was a girl. The tender laughter when she was a young lady...

"..."

His vision darkened. He couldn't think anymore. Then the voices of the humans were heard.

"Eh? He isn't dead? He's squirming?"

"He's lost the cloned appearance, but the nucleus of the body is still alive. However, it might as well be dead because there is a huge degeneration in both abilities and intelligence."

"Should we kill him?"

"Considering the tendencies of a doppelganger, I think it's worth exploring him. Let him recover."

The doppelganger became like a melted tire and didn't move.

On the other hand, Piaro had the shivers. He once again realized after witnessing Grid's power. He might not be born under the same sky as Muller or Pagma, but he was under the same sky as Pagma's power.

‘It is you.’

The person who would lead him to the realm of a sword saint.

## CHAPTER 234

---

After restoring the proper amount of stamina. Grid barely managed to sit up on a flat piece of rock. He noticed the eyes of the Overgeared members looking at him.

‘The atmosphere has changed.’

Was it because he overcame this big trial by surpassing his limit several times over? Grid felt like he had achieved excellent personal growth. Grid shared the item information with the Overgeared members.

[Guardian’s Necklace]

Rating: Unique (Set)

Durability: 23/23 Defense: 35

\* Indomitable +30

\* When the set is worn: Defense +100

\* When the set is worn: Indomitable +50

A necklace manifested by the Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest.

It gives the wearer a strong willpower and defense.

User Restriction: Level 300 or higher.

Weight: 15

[Guardian’s Bracelet]

Rating: Unique (Set)

Durability: 21/21 Defense: 37

\* Indomitable +30

\* When the set is worn: Defense +100

\* When the set is worn: Indomitable +50

A bracelet manifested by the Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest.

It gives the wearer a strong willpower and defense.

User Restriction: Level 300 or higher.

Weight: 11

“Oh, it’s a magic accessory?”

“Yes. Defense is attached to an accessory?”

Most accessories didn’t have much defense. For example, while Doran’s Ring could exert tremendous healing ability equivalent to a legendary rating, it didn’t give even one point of defense. On the other hand, the Guardian’s Necklace and Bracelet both had extremely high defense.

‘With the set effect, they increase defense by 172 points...’

It was comparable to a level 300 heavy gauntlets or heavy boots of the normal rating. It was amazing that these two accessories gave such high defense. However, the members weren’t happy.

“Just high defense? They don’t have any options.”

“Yes. An accessory should at least have some attribute resistance.”

“I need accessories that decrease cooldown time.”

“It raises the indomitable stat, but the stat itself isn’t all that great.”

[Indomitable]

Has a certain probability of invalidating a portion of the incoming damage. The lower the health, the higher the probability.

\* The higher the number, the higher the effect.

\* Stat points can't be distributed to this stat.

According to the stated description, Indomitable was a very useful special stat. In particular, it was an essential stat for tankers. However, because the probability of the stat's effect being activated was extremely low, people treated 'indomitable' as a trash stat.

Grid was more familiar with this than anyone else.

'The indomitable stat really is trash.'

Grid currently had close to 900 points in Indomitable. Despite this fact, he never experienced the indomitable effect. These were the only accessories that a strong boss monster dropped? The Overgeared members were disappointed.

But Grid was different.

"If you guys don't mind, I would like to use these accessories."

After he became Pagma's Descendant. Grid had been self-sufficient regarding items through production and raids. However, accessories weren't an area that blacksmiths could produce and because boss monsters didn't often drop them, Grid didn't have any.

'I couldn't find someone who could handle the purple orichalcum...'

From Grid's perspective, he was grateful even for the Guardian accessory set. The Overgeared members unconditionally agreed to Grid's request.

"Grid, you should do what you want."

"You are the first place in this raid. It is natural for you to have what you want."

"Thank you."

Grid expressed his gratitude and shared the information of the greatsword.

[Doppelganger's Greatsword]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: 731/731 Attack Power: 780~1,516

Attack Speed: -6%

\* Ignores 20% of the enemy's defense.

\* Increases the power of attack skills by 20%.

A greatsword that the Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest copied.

It imitated the work of the legendary blacksmith Pagma, but the resemblance is only in the appearance. The power isn't comparable to Pagma's works.

User Restriction: Level 320 or higher. More than 2,010 strength. Advanced Sword Mastery level 2 or higher.

Weight: 3,955

"Wow...!"

"It is terrific!"

It was overwhelming performance. The Overgeared members let out sounds of admiration. Grid was also impressed.

'It is at this level, despite not being comparable to Pagma's work?'

The damage was slightly less than the unique rated Failure, but the options of the greatsword showed other advantages. In particular, the 20% increase in attack skills damage captivated Grid's heart.

'If I use this greatsword, Pagma's Swordsmanship will be greatly strengthened...'

Of course, it wasn't a weapon good enough to replace Failure. It meant it wasn't suitable for Grid to use. The Overgeared members were also similar.

"It is a pity that it's a greatsword."

“It would’ve been nice if it was a one-handed weapon...”

No one used the greatsword as a weapon among the Overgeared members. Beast Master Toon could handle a greatsword, but his primary weapon was a wrist blade. Both Grid and the Overgeared members felt regret.

“Why don’t you try challenging the two sword style?” Lael suggested.

“Two sword style? Dual swordsmanship?”

“Yes.”

Some swordsmen classes acquired a passive skill called the ‘Two Sword Style’, where they used two swords instead of a shield and boasted powerful attacks and dazzling attack orbits.

“He doesn’t have the skill called Two Sword Style... But it shouldn’t be a problem?”

As Pagma’s Descendant, Grid could handle all weapons regardless of whether he had the required weapon mastery skill. The Overgeared members knew this fact. However, Grid thought negatively.

“How can I do dual swordsmanship with a greatsword...”

The weight wasn’t a problem. Grid’s strength stat was unrivaled. Failure was light by default, but he could swing the relatively heavy Doppelganger’s Greatsword with one hand. But there was a problem. Both Failure and the Doppelganger’s Greatsword had a length of 2m. It wouldn’t be easy to wield two weapons longer than his height at the same time.

Lael persuaded Grid.

“Your control skills have increased by leaps and bounds during this raid. It is more than you can imagine yourself. I am confident that if you try hard and don’t give up, I am convinced that you can do it. Besides, don’t you have a great mentor?”

Lael pointed towards Piaro and said,

“Toon uses two wrist blades and Piaro is the strongest swordsman. If you study with them, won’t you be able to master the Two Sword Style someday?”

“Umm...”

Certainly, it was a tempting suggestion. The Doppelganger's Greatsword increased basic damage and skills damage. By taking advantage of the two weapons and using Pagma's Swordsmanship, he would be able to achieve a much higher attack power.

‘I want to challenge it.’

His blood was boiling. But there was a problem. The Doppelganger's Greatsword was an item obtained in a raid group with the Overgeared members. He couldn't take all the items alone.

Grid hesitated.

“Do as Lael says.”

“That's right. It is a good idea. Grid, can't you use any weapon without limit? You should take advantage of this advantage.”

“You will raise your defense with the accessories, so it's ideal if you can increase your attack power.”

“Everyone...”

They were generously giving it to me. Were they doing him a favor? The Grid in the past would've giggled and accepted it without any conflicts. But now he was different. He had something called a conscience.

The Overgeared members encouraged him when he hesitated.

“In the first place, you are the only one who can use a greatsword. Should we sell it to others for money? Absolutely not. I don't want a ranker getting their hands on a powerful weapon.”

“That's right, should we raise a rival with our own hands?”

“In addition, we owe a lot to Grid.”

After he became the master of the Overgeared Guild. Grid produced the guild members' items for free. He thought it was something he should do as the guild master.



He was always thankful to the Overgeared members.

Now that favor was returning to him.

“Thank you...!”

The Doppelganger’s Greatsword was worth at least three million gold. Grid was thrilled by the Overgeared members’ actions.



“It is extremely difficult to adapt to using two swords in a short period of time. In particular, it is theoretically impossible to master dual wielding with greatswords.

“Do you mean I should give up?”

“No, that isn’t it. It is possible to overcome it with Pagma’s power. But it will take time. First of all, don’t fret. I will try to train you so that you can use dual swords with Pagma’s Swordsmanship.”

Grid and the Overgeared members passed through the Mysterious Forest and climbed the mountain. It was to search for the presence of a mine. While they were moving, Grid discussed how to dual wield with Piaro.

Huroi was walking ahead and he shouted.

“There is a small cabin on the slopes of the mountain.”

“A cabin?”

A person lived in a dangerous area where no one could enter because of the doppelganger? Grid and the Overgeared members were curious but didn’t forget their boundaries. They knocked on the door of the cabin.

“Is anyone here?”

“ ... ”

There was no answer. There were also no sounds.

“Should we enter?”

Vantner wasn't sure if there was a landlord present, but he opened the old door. Then the smell of mold tormented the group.

“This house has been neglected for at least a decade.”

Grid's group started to search the house. However, there was nothing in the house except for a small bed and desk.

“Huh? What is this?”

Vantner discovered an old storage box. It was made of birch and locked like a treasure chest. What was inside? Vantner was curious and tried to break the box. But the system rejected it.

[Nothing happened.]

“This... It looks like we need a key to open the box?”

“Leave it to me.”

Grid came forward. He pulled out his ‘Master Key.’

*Clink.*

The rusty lock was opened with no resistance.

“This...?”

There was a small book in the storage box. Grid opened it.

## CHAPTER 235

---

There was a small book kept in a firmly locked box. It was someone's diary. The first few chapters were filled with crooked letters like a child had written it.

Summer, Year 259 of the Kingdom.

I met a child who looked exactly like me in the forest on the way out of the village.

The person said hello! I also smiled and greeted the child.

"Year 259..."

"146 years ago."

It was a diary from a long time ago. It was remarkably well preserved without anything being erased. Grid turned to the next chapter.

Winter, Year 259 of the Kingdom.

I went to the forest for the first time in a while.

The child who looked exactly like me was wearing summer clothes. I took off my hat and scarf and gave it to the child, who laughed.

Winter, Year 259 of the Kingdom.

I told my dad about the child in the forest.

My dad became angry. He said the child was a dangerous monster. He told me not to

meet the child again.

“The child in this diary is the doppelganger?”

“Indeed.”

Not all monsters were aggressive. There were monsters that attacked humans first, and those that didn't. The Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest seemed to be a gentle monster in the past.

‘If this guy was like this, why did he attack us first?’

Grid and the Overgeared members had questions.

Spring, Year 260 of the Kingdom.

Dad said that child in the forest was dangerous, but he didn't know.

I went to see her again.

The child treasured the hat and scarf that I gave her.

“Hello!” I greeted her. She replied with those words.

We promised to be friends.

Spring, Year 260 of the Kingdom.

I named my friend Randy. My name is Wendy and together, we'll look like sisters.

Autumn, Year 260 of the Kingdom.

Randy now speaks very well. She can follow everything that I say.

My good friend is smart.

Winter, Year 260 of the Kingdom.

I played with Randy every day and was caught by my dad. Dad took out his bow, stating that he was going to kick Randy out.

I was scared and followed.

My dad saw Randy's greeting and couldn't shoot the bow. Thank god.

Summer, Year 261 of the Kingdom.

My dad taught Randy how to use the bow. Now Randy is better at hunting than Dad.

Thanks to Randy, my family never goes hungry.

Thank you Randy.

But I like rabbit meat more than boar meat.

The days in the diary flowed quickly. The young girl called Wendy spent her days pleasantly. Her father and her friend Randy gave her new experiences every day. The feelings conveyed from the diary were happy, so the hearts of Grid and the Overgeared members became warm.

Unfortunately, the contents of the diary started to enter a new phase. It was when Wendy's handwriting started to mature.

Spring, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

There seems to be an amazing mine behind our house. The villagers gathered together to check it, before saying that they should report it to the lord of Reidan.

Spring, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

The lord visited with dozens of knights. He told my dad to guide him to the mine.

The sight of the lord watching me was somewhat unpleasant.

Summer, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

Oh my god!

A gentleman more beautiful than me came to the mine. His dignified manner and fine skin was like a prince from a fairy tale.

The prince was concerned.

“The minds of humans are still too immature to bear this mineral.”

“Is she talking about Pagma?”

“I was thinking the same thing.”

Grid was sure of it after reading the contents of the diary. As Rabbit guessed, there was a mine in this mountain, and the mineral there was so huge that Pagma had to pay attention to it.

‘Yellow mithril.’

Grid kept reading the diary.

Autumn, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

The lord declared that he would develop the mine. Then he ordered me to pour him a drink.

As I was serving him, the lord kept touching my hips.

I was uncomfortable, but refrained because he was the lord.

Autumn, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

The lord said he would make me his concubine.

What is a concubine?

When I asked my father what that meant, he just shed tears.

Autumn, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

The villagers told me. There were one or two women who went to become the lord's concubines, but they were all treated as playthings.

Everyone is worried about me.

Scary...

Winter, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

I explained the matter to Randy, stating that I would need to leave home soon to become the lord's concubine.

I don't want to leave my father and Randy.

I cried loudly and Randy patted my back.

Randy is always nice. Winter with Randy wasn't too cold.

Winter, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

It's serious.

The lord tried to visit the mine, but was attacked by a monster in the Mysterious Forest.

The identity of a monster is a doppelganger.

Randy...

Spring, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

I heard that the angry lord organized an army to kill Randy.

I'm worried about Randy and can't sleep.

Spring, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

As soon as dawn came, I went to Randy.

Randy's appearance was different.

She looked exactly the same as one of the lord's knights.

"I don't like it. I will protect Wendy."

Randy shouted at me to run away.

No matter how I tried to persuade her, Randy wouldn't step back.



What if Randy was hurt?

I was afraid and sad.

“Since then...”

In order to defend the girl called Wendy, the gentle doppelganger started attacking anyone who invaded the forest. He had been fighting for 100 years.

“The Guardian accessories were made by the doppelganger for this.”

What happened to Wendy in the end? Then how did the doppelganger take on Pagma’s appearance? Grid and the Overgeared members became immersed in the diary.

Spring, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

It’s said that Randy defeated the army sent by the lord by herself.

It’s scary that many people died. But Randy was unharmed, so I was happy.

I went to Randy.

“Don’t worry. I’ll protect Wendy. Don’t worry, Wendy, don’t worry.”

Randy repeatedly said the same thing while bleeding.

She was seriously injured and couldn’t get up properly.

I had been saving up herbs to treat Randy.

But Randy was impervious to the effects of the herbs.

I will be with Randy tonight to look after her.

Spring, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

A few days later, Randy's wounds haven't healed.

According to rumors, the lord is preparing a new army.

Please... Somebody please help Randy.

Summer, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

I was leaning on Randy's shoulders.

"Your killing originates from a noble heart."

The prince I saw last year appeared.

Despite Randy swinging the sword, the prince hammered at her.

No!

I yelled, but the prince didn't stop. Randy's body kept being hit.

Then something strange happened.

Randy's wounds became better.

"Is this the concept of repair? The material that makes up the body of a doppelganger can be called a metal." Lael asked.

Grid nodded.

"It seems so."

It seemed like he could do it as well. Grid thought before turning to the next chapter.

Summer, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

“This world is full of danger. Humans are threatened by monsters and are busy fighting among themselves, while the demons underground are helped by the Yatan Church.”

The prince who called himself Pagma said difficult words.

He smiled at me while patting Randy’s head.

“There is a balance to be kept. If the present day Eternal Kingdom has the power to threaten the empire, it would cause great confusion. I will give you the right to use some of my strength, so you must defend this forest thoroughly. The consequence of that will result in Wendy’s safety.”

“...”

Randy was smarter than me. Unlike me, Randy understood the words and nodded.

Then on this day. Randy’s appearance changed into that of the beautiful prince.

Summer, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

Randy defeated the lord’s army.

This time, Randy wasn’t seriously injured.

Thank god. But I was worried.

Randy’s atmosphere changed.

The warmth of his eyes felt a bit cold.

Winter, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

Randy continued to fight for the last few months. The lord hired mercenaries after the army couldn’t defeat Randy.

Randy warned me when I visited him.

“Don’t come here anymore. Wendy should stay with your dad.”

‘Why...?’

“Aren’t we friends? Why are you rejecting me?”

I asked him and Randy explained.

“I’m able to easily kill humans. And Wendy is a human. I... I’m scared.”

Randy looked lonely. My heart hurts.

Spring, Year 272 of the Kingdom.

I visited Randy today.

Randy acted as usual.

He told me to ‘Go back’ and then fell silent. He didn’t respond to any of my stories.

I’m sorry and scared. More than anything, I am sorry.

Summer, Year 272 of the Kingdom.

Randy has killed many people.

‘Are you okay?’

There was no answer from Randy. Now he didn’t even look at me. He just looked into the distance. He’s changing more and more.

Because of me...

Winter, Year 272 of the Kingdom.

My dad went to the village to sell leather and hasn't returned for several days. I tried to visit the village, but Randy blocked my way.

He still didn't speak.

Winter, Year 272 of the Kingdom.

I have to go to the village today!

I yelled at Randy.

I spoke harshly when I said it wasn't necessary for him to protect me.

Then Randy opened the way.

In retrospect, Randy looked very sad.

Winter, Year 272 of the Kingdom.

I arrived in the village and heard shocking news.

My dad was arrested by the lord.

His crime was conspiring with the doppelganger.

The lord found out that my dad and I were close to Randy.

It's all my fault.

The sweet and pure Randy became covered in blood and my dad was suffering...

All my fault.

Winter, Year 272 of the Kingdom.

The lord promised to release my father. Instead, I would become his concubine.

I have no other options.

Spring, Year 273 of the Kingdom.

I met Randy last night.

I couldn't bear to tell him, who was trying to protect me, that I was leaving.

Thank you, I'm sorry. And I can only say that I love you.

Now I am leaving this house. I will never be able to come back. However, I lied and told Randy I would be back after a while.

Today will be my last diary entry.

"...Poor Randy!"

Vantner burst into tears. Unlike his rough appearance, he was very sensitive. Therefore, tears and snot were running down his face.

"Shit! Poor Randy! He struggled to protect Wendy, but in the end he couldn't protect her! He didn't even know that he couldn't protect Wendy. Until now! For over 100 years, he has been waiting for Wendy to come back!"

"..."

The Overgeared members were solemn. They didn't know the circumstances of the doppelganger and just thought he was a bad guy. Grid saw their depressed expressions and smiled.

"Even if it wasn't us, someday someone else would've done the same thing. It's fortunate that we know how Randy was feeling due to this book."

It was a mature comment that they couldn't believe.

"Grid..."

"My Lord..."

The Overgeared members comforted by Grid were impressed. They felt genuine respect for the ever-changing and growing Grid. Grid turned to the 'real last chapter' of the diary.

Summer, Year 286 of the Kingdom.

The lord abandoned me.

My soul and body that have become rags have finally found freedom.

The Mysterious Forest that I hadn't returned to in 13 years.

Randy was waiting for me, looking just like he did in the past.

Randy...

There were so many words I wanted to say. I wanted to express my pain. But I didn't want Randy's heart to hurt, so I smiled as brightly as possible.

I'm back.

In the last chapter of the diary, small traces of blood could be seen. It seemed like Wendy became sick while living the lonely life of the lord's concubine.

"She died shortly after returning home. The doppelganger must not understand that humans have a different life-span and had been waiting until this day."

"Um..."

Grid closed the diary.

Then a notification window popped up.

[You have learned a little more about the person called Pagma.]

[There is a bond with Pagma. The growth rate of your skills will increase.]

‘What?’

The legendary skills had the disadvantage that their effect and power were excellent, but the growth speed was slow. This would overcome that shortcoming. Grid was delighted by the unexpected harvest when the notification windows were renewed.

[You have discovered the story of the Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest.]

[The Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest that fell by your hands is now different from the past. Its intelligence, physical abilities and most of its memories have been degraded. But if you call it Randy, it will be delighted and follow you.]

This was an opportunity to get a new pet. Grid couldn’t resist.

‘I will be your new friend.’

*Ttalkak.*

Grid decided to put the diary back in its place. Then he ordered the Overgeared members.

“After confirming the mine, I will collect the doppelganger and return.”

It was an expedition where he could obtain many things.



## CHAPTER 236

---

Grid and the Overgeared members returned.

It took four days, which was twice as long as the planned schedule. Rabbit came out and met them.

“I was worried since you were late.”

Vantner grumbled, “As part of training, we defeated all of the monsters on the way and back from the destination.”

Grid received the grumbles and laughed. “We’ve become a lot stronger thanks to that.”

It was true.

During the past four days, they constantly hunted as well as raided the doppelganger. Therefore, the Overgeared members made tremendous progress. It wasn’t just increasing their levels and items. Their control and ability to cooperate with each other had increased dramatically. It was thanks to Piaro’s teachings, who was an expert in tactics as well as swordsmanship.

Rabbit spoke bitterly, “Please stick to the schedule in the future. There will be a big loss if the schedule is out of order.”

Grid listened to him. He and the Overgeared members all had important positions in Reidan. It was too much to delay them with him. Grid carved that advice into himself.

“I will be careful.”

‘He has become more mature.’

Rabbit smiled as he perceived the new changes in Grid. “Anyway, I’m glad that you’re fine. What was the result?”

Did a mine really exist in Alzar Mountain?

If there was a mine, was it really a yellow mithril mine? Rabbit was full of expectations,

and Grid didn't disappoint him.

"The mine was secured. As you guessed, it's a yellow mithril mine."

"Ohh...!"

Yellow mithril had appeared in the history of alchemy hundreds of years ago. None of the present day people had witnessed yellow mithril. Now Reidan obtained a monopoly on yellow mithril. It was a feat that even the empire, which occupied more than half of the territory on the continent, had failed at.

The resulting ripple effect would be huge.

"You did a great job. Reidan's future has been obtained."

It wasn't an exaggeration. Reidan would be able to establish a unique position with alchemy. It was expected that there would be an explosive synergy with alchemy and the legendary blacksmith.

As a result, Reidan would become the Talima of the human world.

"Let's go to the meeting room. We need to discuss mine development and the alchemy investment funds." Rabbit said excitedly, but Grid shook his head.

"I'm okay. Discuss it with the Overgeared members and proceed on your own."

"I understand."

Rabbit already knew that Grid was deliberately avoiding his duties as a lord and didn't panic. He just felt relief for being trusted, and a burning motivation.

'I will do my best to make both of us rich.'

The decisive Rabbit moved to the meeting room with the Overgeared members. A small woman was left alone with Grid. A female with twin tailed blonde hair, it was Euphemina.

"You seem to have completed all the work well. Congratulations."

Euphemina was tired. It was natural, since she had been working without a break

since returning from Frontier with Rabbit.

“Why did you call me? Do you have something else for me to do?”

There were sharp points in Euphemina’s words. It seemed that she wanted to hit him.

Then Grid spoke some surprising words.

“Rest for the moment.”

“...Huh?”

Euphemina’s eyes widened. She was confused by Grid’s unexpected words.

“I know that you’ve been working harder than anyone else over the past few months. Haven’t you gone through a lot since joining the guild? Take some time to recharge and get a good night’s sleep. You can also raise your level, which you have been postponing.”

“Is it okay?”

Reidan was short-handed compared to the size of the city. In such a situation, it would be a big blow if an elite like Euphemina was to leave. Grid laughed at her hesitance.

“Yes, Reidan is quite stable thanks to your work. The experts in each field have been trained, so don’t worry too much.”

“Grid...”

Euphemina was moved.

In retrospect, this was the first time Grid had been so kind to her. He was always chilly and awkward, so this attitude change felt like a reward for her hard work. But that good atmosphere didn’t last for long.

“I recommend the Siren Kingdom as the hunting ground. While you are there, you should get some of the Water Clan King’s tears.”

“...”

It was the moment when Grid's intentions were revealed. Euphemina's expression cooled.

"You want me to go to the Siren Kingdom and get the tears of the water clan king?"

The effect of the Water Clan King's Tears was unrivaled. It was a rare material that permanently gave magic to an item. But it was hard to find. Grid once again gave her a mission under the guise of a vacation.

'How long must I be abused?'

Euphemina sighed. She was treated as a princess everywhere she went, but now she was just a worker? She felt skeptical about whether she really should've joined the Overgeared Guild. Then Grid handed an item to her. It wasn't a robe or a cloak. It was a hooded zip up that could be seen in modern society.

"What's this?" Euphemina was puzzled by the unfamiliar item and asked Grid.

"A gift."

"What...?"

Euphemina didn't show much of a response. She saw the Hooded Zip Up as just a decorative item. But she was shocked as soon as she confirmed the item information.

"I-Invisibility cloak?"

Around 200 years ago, the legendary tailor Kruger made five invisibility cloaks, two of which still reportedly existed. But no one knew where to obtain them. Invisibility cloaks were a super rare system. Euphemina was thrilled by the gift.

"I will go to the Siren Kingdom!"

Euphemina once again thought it was good that she joined Overgeared. Grid's mood improved as he saw her happiness.

Give and take. The joy of a colleague was his joy. The growth of a colleague was his growth.

Grid honestly thought so.



Khan's smithy.

Grid opened the pet inventory and pulled out the 'Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest.'

*Crash.*

The liquid was reminiscent of molten metal and stretched over the floor without much effort. Grid pulled out his hammer.

'Repair it.'

In Wendy's diary, Pagma had repaired the doppelganger. On the basis of that, Pagma's Descendant should also be able to repair the doppelganger. Grid didn't doubt it. Then he started to repair the doppelganger with the Legendary Blacksmith's Repair skill Lv. 3.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

It wasn't easy to repair the doppelganger. He didn't know the repair method because he had no understanding of the structure of the body. He had no choice but to study it. Grid believed in himself. To be precise, he believed in the Legendary Blacksmith's Repair skill. He was sure the skill would lead him correctly.

Then one hour later. Grid finally determined the core and hammered quickly.

[Your dexterity has risen by 5.]

[Your persistence has risen by 3.]

[The Legendary Blacksmith's Repair skill has reached level 4.]

[The Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest has been restored!]

The welcome notification windows popped up as the doppelganger started to move. Now it had a slime like appearance. Grid confirmed the information window.

Name: Not Set

Species: Doppelganger

Level: 1 (0/200)

Affinity: 0/100

Health: 1,200/1,200

Physical Attack Power: 15 Magic Attack Power: 2

Defense: 30 Magic Resistance: 6

Attributes: Nothing

Status: Confusion

(Who am I...?)

\* A doppelganger that existed for over 150 years in the Mysterious Forest. It has accumulated wisdom through human relations and has a lot of combat experience.

Above all, there is the power to copy the appearance and abilities of the legendary blacksmith Pagma, so it isn't comparable to normal doppelgangers.

-Current Skills List-

[Copy Lv. 10 (Mastered)]

Can perfectly copy the appearance of a target with a lower level than it. The stats are only 80% copied. Only some skills (random) will be copied.

It can completely copy the appearance of a target on the same level as it. The stats are only 50% copied. Only some skills (random) will be copied.

Can perfectly copy the appearance of a target with a higher level. The stats are only 20% copied. Only a small number of skills (random) will be copied.

Perfectly copies the owner's appearance. The stats are only 30% copied. Only some skills (selected) will be copied.

[Language Ability Lv. 1]

The language ability is at the level of a five year old child.

[Half Immortality (Passive)]

Somewhere in the doppelganger's body, there is a core of life energy. The doppelganger won't die unless this core is completely destroyed.

'Wonderful.'

Grid was thrilled. The basic stats of the doppelganger at level one were very low compared to Noe, but the Copy skill was excellent. Grid could use it as a clone that demonstrated 30% of his stats.

'I have to take care to raise its level.'

Grid set a policy to treat the doppelganger differently from Noe. If Noe knew, he would be jealous.

"Wh... o?" The doppelganger was confused. "Who am I...? You... Who?"

Grid kindly explained to the doppelganger who was asking questions. "Your name is Randy. And I am Grid. We are friends."

"Ran... dy. Frie... nds."

Was it a remainder of the lost memories? The doppelganger slowly changed to look like a five or six year old girl. She had orange hair and was very cute. She would be beautiful when she was older.

'This child is Wendy.'

Grid's expression darkened. He felt compassion for Randy and Wendy's unhappy life.

"Randy. Good name. Friend. Good."

"I'm glad that you like it."

Randy smiled very brightly. Grid couldn't help stroking her hair.

'There might've been a sad ending in your past life, but this life will be different.'

Grid decided. He aimed to give Randy happiness.

“Next...”

He needed to strengthen the Doppelganger’s Greatsword and Grid’s Boots in turn. Grid took out a large amount of enhancement stones that the Overgeared members had conceded to him.

‘After this preparation, I’ll get revenge for Piaro.’

It was the moment when a new legend in the history of the Saharan Empire would soon be recorded.



## CHAPTER 237

---

Grid had a lot of experience with items enhancement. Grid had done a lot of enhancement compared to the other users of Satisfy. Grid took advantage of his passive skill that ‘increased the probability of enhancement’ to enhance the guild members’ items.

‘There’s no trick to enhancement.’

Enhancement wasn’t affected by stats such as dexterity. Superstitions such as enhancing at certain times, or repairing the item first before enhancement were useless. The success was purely based on luck. It was a truth he had learned from countless enhancements.

“Umm.”

Grid looked at the dozens of enhancement stones in his inventory. He was extremely nervous. He was more nervous than when he went to see his first love, Ahyoung.

‘I need either the greatsword or the boots to reach at least +7...’

Would he be successful? Would his hair loss return if he received damage from this? It was a matter of money, so he was bound to be more sensitive. God, Buddha, goddess Rebecca, etc. Grid prayed earnestly to the gods that existed in the game and reality, then started the enhancement with trembling hands.



The discussion on the mine development and alchemy investment funding was over. The results were positive because Lauel and Rabbit were in agreement. However, the Overgeared members who left the meeting room weren’t happy.

“We’re going to suffer over the next few months.” Vantner grumbled.

He had a mission to destroy the monsters around the path from Reidan to Alzar Mountain. Wouldn’t the monsters just respawn if they were killed? At least 10 giant worm nests needed to be destroyed.

The 17 Overgeared members working with Vantner sighed. But Pon envied them.

‘It’s better than me...’

Pon was commanded to identify all the dungeons and boss monsters in the west. It was a mission to investigate which hunting ground would give them the most money. He was in charge, since it was a highly difficult mission.

Regas, who received the mission with him, smiled and spoke. “It’s interesting. Let’s take this opportunity to challenge a two person raid.” It was Regas’ dream to grow stronger through struggling. Pon had to be with this ignorant guy whose brain was made up of muscles. He could see a rocky path in front of him.

Lauel encouraged them.

“Our roles are important while Grid is away. Let’s take responsibility by raising our levels and developing the city.”

“Grid is going to the Saharan Empire?”

“Yes, he says there is an important quest from Piaro.”

“The empire... I hope that Grid doesn’t encounter any bumps in the road.”

The world was wide and there were a lot of monsters. And most of the monsters were in the empire.



The spacious fields of Reidan.

Piaro was standing where wheat had started to grow. Looking at his sweaty appearance, he really was like a farmer. Then Bland and the workers saw a welcome face.

“Duke Grid is coming here.”

“...!”

The eyes of all the workers turned to one side at once. It was really the lord.

People cheered.

“Hooray Duke Grid! Hooray Duke Grid!”

The people of Reidan had one mindset. They cheered every time they saw Grid. It wasn't because someone forced them. The people were just absolutely loyal to Grid.

“The enhancement was good.”

A blue energy was rising like a haze from Grid's boots. Grid's smile wasn't because Piaro noticed quickly. He was able to strengthen both the Doppelganger's Greatsword and Grid's Boots to +8.

He was lucky. In this event, his knowledge of Pagma's Swordsmanship increased, he got a doppelganger for a pet, and he found a yellow mithril mine. Everything was going well.

Grid wanted to maintain this momentum.

“I think that now is the time to get your revenge. I will head to the empire.”

His eyes were determined. Piaro felt a strong trust in Grid.

“I believe you can get the job done.”

[A quest has been created.]

[The True Traitor of the Red Knights]

Difficulty Level: SS

Asmophel dared to rendezvous with the empress and was caught by Piaro. Piaro and his men were framed and branded as traitors.

Due to that, he lost his men and had to flee. Now Piaro has no intention of forgiving Asmophel.

However, it is virtually impossible for Piaro to get revenge himself.

Piaro has made you his agent of revenge.

Quest Clear Conditions: Kill Asmophel, the former vice captain of the Red Knights.

Quest Reward: Piaro's affinity will reach the peak.

Quest Failure: Level -6.

[Would you like to accept the quest?]

'It has changed in many ways.'

In the past when Grid was a beginner, the level of difficulty for this quest was S-grade. And the quest rewards were the title of 'Agent of Revenge' and Piaro's sword. Now the difficulty had been raised and the rewards changed.

It was a phenomenon that occurred when his relationship with Piaro improved and Piaro's heart stabilized.

'What will happen if my affinity with Piaro reaches the maximum?'

Was it possible he would teach Grid his sword techniques?

'That won't happen.'

Piaro's swordsmanship belonged to his family. It wouldn't be easy to teach others. Grid thought about it differently.

'Will he become my subordinate?'

Piaro's power was beyond imagination. If Grid could obtain Piaro as a subordinate, it would be like obtaining a group of men. Grid was filled with great expectations and accepted the quest.

"Believe in me."

Piaro saw his confidence and warned him. "I've said it before, but the empire is full of strong people. The process to approach Asmophel was difficult, so be cautious."

"I understand."

Grid answered well, but he wasn't particularly nervous. Piaro spoke again. "Don't trust

your techniques. The two sword technique isn't something that can be completely handled with such a short amount of training."

Grid had practiced dual wielding on the way back from the doppelganger raid. Grid nodded. "Don't worry, I know."

Grid replied like this, but his inner intentions were different.

'Right now I'm lacking, but that will change over time.'

His destination was the capital of the empire, Titan. It would take at least 20 days to arrive. If he practiced steadily on the way, he would be able to use the two sword style sufficiently. It was possible because Piaro trained him well in the basics.



The empire was the center of the world. It was natural for the empire to be the master of the continent, and it was right for kingdoms outside the empire to obey them. It was a very arrogant and selfish thought.

But no kingdom could condemn them. The power of the Saharan Empire was overwhelming.

"This is the village of the Ul Clan."

The master of the White Wolf Guild, Veradin, was a baron of the empire. He received an order from Earl Zebra to subjugate the immigrants, and he finally found the base of the enemy. It was the accomplishment at the end of a one week journey.

Veradin was cautious. "How many enemies?"

Kiki, a sniper used the Hawk's Eyes skill and reported. "1,050 people. More than half of them are women and young children."

It meant that less than 500 people could fight properly. Veradin was relieved.

"There's no need for tactics. Rush from the front and wipe them out."

Kiki's reaction was unsure. "No matter how I think about it, this isn't something that people should do."

The Ul Clan were ordinary humans rather than monsters. They were a poor clan because they weren't designated as citizens of the empire. It was a pity, because they were once a flourishing nation until they were deprived of their land by the empire. The few remaining people chose to hide in the most remote areas.

Kiki was unwilling to kill them.

Veradin rebuked her. "They're just NPCs. Don't be shaken by unnecessary sentiments."

If they killed the Ul Clan, their contribution to the empire would increase by 12 per person. Veradin wanted to build a foundation to become a viscount by performing this quest perfectly.

Kiki sighed.

"Sigh... I wish a golem army would arrive."

This was the story about the golem invasion that took place in the Eternal Kingdom several months ago. Naturally, Grid's name emerged.

"That Grid brat was really lucky."

"That's right. He happened to become a duke in one shot by killing the golem army that invaded the kingdom by chance."

"Ah! I'm envious! If we belonged to the Eternal Kingdom, we would've been able to defeat the golems and occupied a duke's seat!"

As the guild members started talking about unnecessary things, Veradin scolded them.

"Focus on the mission."

"Yes!"

The guild members restored their posture. Unlike Kiki, they didn't show any resistance to hunting the Ul Clan. Weren't NPCs just a lump of graphics and artificial intelligence? They resembled people, but weren't actually people.

It was easy to kill them. It was nothing. Veradin confirmed that the guild members were emanating a fighting spirit and ordered.

“Trample them.”

“Waaaaahhhhh!”

Except for Kiki, 24 guild members went down the mountain together.

It was a tremendous speed. They didn't slow down despite the rugged rocks. The Ul Clan discovered them along the way and fired arrows and magic from the watchtower. However, it was useless. They avoided or defended against all attacks and quickly reached the goal.

“Get lost!”

“Thanks for the contribution~”

“Kuaack!”

It was an unbelievable situation where only 24 people wiped out 1,000 people. The small village soon turned into a hell. It was a one-sided massacre.

“P-Please, my only daughter...”

“Just die quietly.”

People begged, but the White Wolf guild members had no mercy. The women, children, and elderly were murdered. But the cruel killing didn't last long.

“I'm not the boy detective, so why do incidents happen everywhere I go? Well, I got a quest and it isn't too bad...”

The White Wolf members were confused. It was because a user, not an NPC, emerged from one corner of the village.

‘Who is that person?’

He was wearing a broad-brimmed hat so his appearance and ID couldn't be determined. The White Wolf members asked the man.

“Who are you?”

“Me?” The man held a jade greatsword in his hand and replied, “This time I am the Apostle of Justice.”

*Puok!*

“What?!”

Veradin’s eyes widened. The same man appeared behind Veradin’s ally and stabbed him?

“A clone...!”

It wasn’t a normal clone. It was the first time he saw a clone that could exert such power.

‘A high level user!’



## CHAPTER 238

---

Most clones were illusions. They were merely a gimmick that couldn't exert substantial force. However, the unidentified man's clone dealt a real blow. The guild member Elvo screamed as he was hit.

The White Wolf guild members became frightened.

'I heard that a third advancement assassin can have a perfect clone.'

'What? Then this man is an assassin over level 300?'

'Is that Faker...?'

Faker was the number one assassin and 14th ranked monster on the unified rankings. It was rare for him to reveal himself in public, but there were many rumors. It was said that the number of users assassinated was over 10,000, and rankers were always attacked by him.

There was a rumor that even the first ranked Kraugel suffered a level decrease after being assassinated by Faker. Of course, they were lies. Faker wasn't a player killer. He was like Regas and liked personal training.

But rumors were always distorted and exaggerated. The White Wolf Guild misunderstood Faker as a murderer. Was the man in front of them really Faker?

'We are inferior.'

'Today is my day to die!'

The White Wolf members started to shake. They gulped and shivered. Veradin spoke a few words to calm them down. "Assassins don't use a greatsword. In addition, they are covert. If he was Faker, we would already be dead."

"Ah...!"

They were confused and overlooked the obvious facts. The guild members regained their calm as Veradin explained.

“That person is likely to have a hidden class.”

It was a reasonable guess. Hidden classes existed in Satisfy. It wasn't strange if there was a hidden class specialized in clones. The guild members were relieved.

“Phew... I'm glad. I don't want to go against Faker.”

“Dealing with a hidden class is easier than dealing with a third advancement ranker.”

“Those people are too scary.”

It showed how much the dignity of hidden classes had been lost since the third advancement classes. Veradin was alarmed at the guild members' relaxation and warned them.

“It's still difficult to gauge the opponent's ability. Don't act hastily and step back.”

The White Wolf members had strong loyalty. They stepped back without a fuss as soon as Veradin commanded them.

*Step step.*

The unidentified man walked through the streets.

“You aren't fighting back? Are you scared?”

As a guild master, Veradin was always cautious. He didn't fall for the taunts. He closely watched the man and the clone as he asked. “What is your relationship with the Ul Clan? Why are you helping them?”

The answer was concise. “I got a quest.”

That person was Grid. During his journey, he accidentally visited the Ul Clan's village and got a quest when the village was attacked by the enemy. He couldn't help wondering if he was cursed to get involved in incidents wherever he went.

## [Ul Clan's Rescue]

Difficulty: A

The Ul Clan have been deprived of their kingdom by the Saharan Empire, and the survivors are hiding in remote areas. However, they couldn't escape from the empire's surveillance and an invasion is once again occurring.

Free them from the clutches of the empire.

Then you will be their sun.

Quest Clear Conditions: Repel the invaders.

Quest Reward: Your affinity with the Ul Clan will reach the maximum.

Quest Failure: The Ul Clan will perish.

Four days ago.

Prior to leaving Reidan, Grid had studied the empire and found that it carried out a policy of genocide. Minorities who didn't serve the emperor were slaughtered in various parts of the empire. Indeed, it was a brutal oppression. If they wanted to try and oppose it?

It was futile. Grid hadn't accepted the Ul Clan's quest for a noble reason. He just coveted the reward.

'If they don't have a place to go to and their affinity is at the maximum...'

Couldn't he accept them as his people? The Ul Clan's quest was a chance to increase the population of Reidan. It would be ideal if he could bring all the persecuted minorities in the empire to Reidan. Grid was starting to think and act in the manner of a lord. Lael would be impressed if he knew.

"You have two choices."

Grid's eyes shone with killing intent. He was inwardly furious after witnessing the brutality of the White Wolf Guild. Grid had high respect for NPCs due to the influence of Khan and Irene.

“You can die easily, or you can get beaten up first before you die. Choose.”

“Crazy bastard!”

The White Wolf members were furious. What was this damn arrogant guy saying?

“Veradin! How long are you going to let that brat’s mouth run wild? We should attack him right now! Anyway, he’s alone!”

Elvo was particularly furious. He was surprise attacked by the clone and suffered damage. Veradin checked Elvo’s health gauge.

‘Well, it isn’t bad.’

Elvo was a berserker, so his defense was very low. However, he only lost one-fifth of his health after the surprise attack.

‘The clone isn’t very strong.’

The unknown man’s clone was much weaker than he was. This evidence clearly showed that it wasn’t very strong. ‘Maybe he can produce a lot of clones. But it’s easy to deal with clones at this level.’

Veradin made a judgment call and ordered the guild members.

“We won’t be able to avoid this fight. Do it.”

“Okay!”

Elvo was in the lead. At level 179, he was the lowest among the White Wolf members, but he liked being in the vanguard. He was very courageous and not afraid of others.

“I’ll kill you!”

Elvo was full of killing intent. He wanted to deal a nasty blow to the clone.

“Dash!”

*Teong!*

A distance of 3m was narrowed in an instant. Elvo smiled with satisfaction at his own dashing ability. Then he used the 'Madness Vortex' skill. This was the manifestation of five powerful blows that could even cause great damage to an ogre.

However, it met the wrong opponent.

[The target has resisted the damage.]

"Eh?"

It wasn't defense but resistance. The skill apparently hit. Then what the hell was the resistance to damage? Grid stared at the stunned Elvo.

"You want me to die?"

"Heok?"

The prideful Elvo was now like a terrified rodent. It was because of the dignity stat, which had a low chance of making the enemy yield. Grid had over 1,500 dignity, so it was hard for low or medium ranked users to endure his greatness.

[You have become lost in front of an immeasurable existence. Your head involuntarily bows. Your body is shaky and head begins to move.]

'W-What...!'

He was stunned just because he met the person's gaze? Was this guy a medusa boss? Elvo couldn't believe the situation right now. It was a dream. The other guild members didn't know the situation and were rushing around, like moths to a flame.

"Magic Transmission!"

"Atra's Poison!"

"Fire Spear!"

“Lower Cut!”

“This is a kick! Abyooo~!”

All types of CC, physical attacks and magic attacks were used. 20 enemies used skills at the same time, so Grid seemed to be in danger. The silent clone came out. It was the doppelganger Randy.

“Revolve.”

*Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!*

The counterattack skill was activated at the perfect timing. The White Wolf members were attacked by their own skills.

“Kuaaaak!”

“What is this absurd thing?”

The White Wolf Guild members were agitated. What was with this clone’s skill? Furthermore, it was a counterattack skill that even a person found difficult to use? The one who was most surprised was Veradin.

‘He didn’t show his skills in the first surprise attack!’

He realized it right away. Randy had 30% of Grid’s current combat power. To be honest, he was equivalent to level 200. If he wanted, he couldn’t cut the guild member in half with the first attack.

But Randy refrained. He deliberately pretended to be weak to make the enemies less vigilant. This was Randy’s instinctive judgment, not Grid’s orders. He lost his memories of the past, but the battle experience accumulated for more than 100 years was firmly engraved in him.

Grid admired Randy’s strategy.

“Look at those facial expressions. I was surprised as well. Isn’t my friend really great?”

‘Friend?’

Wasn't it a clone? Then what was it? The White Wolf members fell into the black hole of confusion.

*Puok!*

Then the jade greatsword penetrated Elvo's chest.

[You have been hit by a lethal blow!]

[The enemy has attacked five times using an unknown ability.]

[You have suffered 103,900 damage.]

'Over 100,000? Not 10,000, but 100,000? I don't even have 20,000 health!'

Elvo's vision turned grey.

'Is this a dream?'

[Your party member Elvo has died.]

Silence filled the area. A monster beyond imagination had appeared in front of the White Wolf members.

But Veradin kept calm. He was part of the 10 Rookies along with Lauel and Ibellin, and he was now level 281. He didn't feel frustrated when meeting a strong opponent. Moreover, he had a hidden card. There was a sniper who remained in the mountain.

—Now.

Veradin whispered and gave the signal. There was a small flash from the low mountain 300m in the rear, then an arrow came flying.

*Peeeeeeong!*

Kiki was also part of the 10 Rookies. The White Wolf Guild's number two person. Her

sniper skill was comparable to Jishuka, the expert archer. She precisely fired an arrow at Grid's head. Veradin had no doubt that the person would experience great damage or confusion, and took out his staff. He was trying to raise the corpses of the Ul and Elvo with magic when he suddenly froze.

"T-This...?"

Cries of shock burst out everywhere. They saw it. The famous golden blades.

"I am surprised."

The man's voice was heard from behind the golden blades that protected their master from the arrow. The voice was filled with a powerful anger that could stop the heart of the person who heard it.

*Sururuk.*

Was it due to the shock wave caused by the arrow and blades colliding? The hat the man was wearing fell off. The ID that most people in the world knew was exposed.

"Grid...!"

The first legendary class, three gold medal holder in the National Competition, the hero of the golem invasion, the first user to become a duke, GOD, etc. He had countless nicknames attached to him.

Then he pulled out the blue greatsword that he used to defeat Hurent in five seconds. The people present felt frightened at Grid holding two huge swords in each of his hands.

"Don't use surprise attacks!"

'You did it first!'

The White Wolf members wanted to cry out. But they couldn't grumble. Grid's eyes fixed to the top of the mountain 300m away.

"You first of all. Transcended Link."

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*



Blue-white and jade energy blades emerged at the same time. It was the moment when one small mountain permanently vanished from the map of the Saharan Empire.

[Your party member Kiki has died.]

“...I would’ve rather met Faker.”

The White Wolf members complained. Veradin couldn’t keep his composure anymore. This was the worst catastrophe since the guild’s launch. The result was a complete annihilation.



“Huh? The size of the desert is less than it was a year ago?”

A black-haired man dressed in white stepped foot in the western part of the Eternal Kingdom.

## CHAPTER 239

---

‘An A-grade quest was surprisingly tough.’

Grid’s power was unique: ever since he had obtained it, he had almost easily solved all A-grade quests. But this time was different. He lost more than one-sixth of his stamina and health at the cost of hunting 25 enemies.

“It was an unexpected melee.”

Anybody who heard that statement would cry out, as there was no such thing. It was more accurate to say that it was a slaughter of 25 people without a conscience. However, Grid thought differently. This was shocking for him, the one who had overwhelmed the top rankers in the National Competition!

‘The average level of the enemy was only around 200. Yet I couldn’t succeed in an instant...’ This was because Veradin was a necromancer. ‘That bastard was too strong.’

A necromancer was a nuisance as an opponent. They didn’t distinguish between friend or foe, as corpses were unconditionally revived and used as soldiers. It was a class that consumed the enemy’s resources (health, mana, stamina etc.) because it was so easy to make.

In the case of Veradin, his level was high and knew how to fight. The undead soldiers were skilled in offense and defense, so they harassed him. Veradin’s combat ability was no less than that of the Overgeared members.

‘It would be nice to create an item that could easily kill the undead.’

Indeed, experience was very important. Grid gained insight from his new combat experience. He was able to make more advanced plans by adding items to fight the undead in the future. Grid was quickly evolving in real time.

He touched the Guardian’s Bracelet with a gentle expression.

‘The more I use this, the more I like it.’

Originally, Grid’s indomitable stat was 900. Now, however, it was over 1,000 after

wearing the Guardian accessories set. As a result, the effect of the indomitable stat was often triggered. He completely resisted the attacks of lower-levelled enemies.

It was the result of his abnormally high defense and indomitable stat.

‘Randy was more than I expected.’

Grid had no doubts about Randy’s fighting skills. Randy copied 30% Grid’s stats and items, so he was around a level 180 swordsman. However, the legendary-rated Pagma’s Swordsmanship gave Randy wings.

Randy copied Pinnacle and Link, as well as the highly usable Revolve. He was able to beat quite a few level 200 users, and was a really good colleague. Grid praised him as Randy returned to the shape of a little girl.

“You fought well.”

Randy’s buggy eyes shone like stars.

“Praise! Happy!”

It was a lovely smiling face with a flush.

‘Sehee was once cute like this.’

Grid patted her head and said,

“I also want to fight with Master! Nyang! Why don’t you let me fight? Nyang! Why is the best demonic beast being treated like this? Kyang!”

Noe had been hunting alone around Reidan and was now level 143. He was hoping to grow with his master while traveling together this time, but Master was too busy with the doppelganger and not looking at Noe. He didn’t like it.

Grid soothed the jealous Noe, “You are my precious secret weapon. I don’t need to borrow the strength of my great secret weapon for something minor like this.”

“Ohh...! Ohhhh!”

The words ‘secret weapon’, ‘precious’ and ‘great’ were attached to him, so Noe really

liked it. He danced with his short limbs. It was cute and ridiculous since Noe's chubby body was shaking. Grid observed Noe's appearance. The horns that rose from the forehead were slightly bigger and the fangs were sharper.

'He is becoming increasingly like a demonic beast.' Grid's demonic power rose by one every time he PKed. 'Surely I won't become a demon if my demonic power stat increases?'

The higher the demonic power, the more likely he was to go to hell. However, at present, there was no way of going in and out of hell so he couldn't help imagining bad things.

Then the Ul Clan survivors came running.

"Hero!"

The village mayor, Buda greeted him on behalf of everyone.

"If you didn't help us, our people would've been lost in the backdrops of history! I don't know how to express our gratitude!"

[The quest 'Ul Clan's Rescue' has been complete.]

[Affinity with the Ul Clan has risen to the maximum. The Ul Clan will jump over a cliff for you.]

The Ul Clan bowed to Grid. Grid took out the Great Lord's Sword and looked at their abilities.

'Their intelligence stat is very high?'

General NPCs had an intelligence around 100. But the average of the Ul Clan was 300. In particular, a girl called Hwarin stood out.

Name: Hwarin.

Age: 11 Gender: Female

Occupation: Refugee

Title: Last of the Ul Clan's Royal Family.

Level: 7

Strength: 3/70 Stamina: 12/249

Agility: 14/398 Intelligence: 120/1,890

Charm: 155/1,503 Dignity: 30/550

Skills: Haven't learnt any yet.

A survivor of the Ul Kingdom that the Saharan Empire destroyed. Her identity might be hidden but she actually has the noble lineage of the Ul Clan.

'This is good.'

The Ul Clan was an excellent race. They would be useful in many ways. Among them, it was possible to train some as magicians. Grid asked them, "The empire isn't a place where you can live. Would you consider moving to the Eternal Kingdom?"

"The Eternal Kingdom...?" The Eternal Kingdom was one of the great powers among the 17 nations of the continent. But these kingdoms weren't in the same position as the empire. "Will the Eternal Kingdom accept us, who are hunted by the empire? It might provide grounds for the empire to...?"

"If you move in secret then the empire won't notice."

"But the royal family won't be happy."

"Don't worry, go to Reidan. Even the royal family can't intervene in the administration of a duchy."

"Who are you?"

“I am the master of Reidan. I promise the people there will treat you without discrimination.”

“Heok...! That means you are a duke!”

The Ul Clan were perplexed. Why was the duke of another kingdom in the empire? They couldn't understand it with their common sense.

Grid whispered to Lael.

*–I need someone who can lead 930 people from Earl Zebra's territory in the empire to Reidan.*

*–Yes?*

Grid explained the situation to the confused Lael. The joyful Lael then recommended Faker. Grid responded with surprise.

*–Faker? Is it okay?*

Faker always moved in the darkness. He didn't show himself in public, and wasn't a suitable figure to lead people. But Lael gave a different opinion.

*–Faker's trap installation ability and situational judgment abilities are unique. If there are pursuers, he can install traps as quickly as possible as well as secretly lead the Ul Clan.*

*–I know his abilities but... Isn't there someone better than Faker?*

*–There is a lot of work piled up in Reidan. It is impossible to send more than two people, so please trust Faker.*

It was decided. Then Grid used a skill.

“Summon Knight.”

[Summon a knight. Currently you have Huroi, Lael, Jude, Jishuka, Euphemina, Faker, Pon and Regas. Which knight would you like to summon?]

“Faker.”

[The target has accepted the summons.]

*Sururuk.*

A man wrapped in a black cloak rose from Grid’s shadow. He spoke to Grid with a nonchalant expression.

“You worked hard.”

“Yes.”

*Suuk.*

Faker observed the Ul Clan with emotional eyes. The Ul Clan felt like crying as they saw him.

‘Those eyes feel like they are penetrating me to the bone.’

‘I-I’m scared.’

The Ul Clan felt fear. They were affected by Faker’s killing intent stat. That’s why Faker normally acted in secret. He had to consume his mental power to hide this killing intent. For an assassin, the killing intent stat was like a type of penalty.

“Go.”

Faker didn’t delay. He instructed the frightened Ul Clan to grab their luggage and immediately left the village.

After a few days with Faker, the Ul Clan felt like they were sitting on a thorny cushion. Faker didn’t say a single word, but they became increasingly frightened of him. They felt like they would die if they touched him, and couldn’t even breathe.

On the other hand, Grid changed his schedule and was busy hunting. It was an

inevitable choice because his infamy went up due to PKing. It was impossible to enter a village or city if his infamy figure was high. It might be okay to move freely in the Eternal Kingdom, regardless of his infamy figure, but this was the empire. It was necessary to lower his infamy by hunting monsters.

However, the monsters in Zebra were only level 180~220. They gave less experience and it wasn't easy to decrease his infamy. Grid was nervous because he was delaying more than he wanted, but he still remained calm. He bought time by practicing dual swordsmanship and raising the experience of Randy and Noe.

Then a homing pigeon arrived.

It was the letter from Irene that regularly arrived once a week. Normally the letters expressed a desire to see him, but today's one was special.

"This letter?"

Grid was astonished.

Irene was always stating that she wanted to get pregnant, but he didn't think it was really capable to get pregnant from a relationship between a user and NPC.

*Around a month ago, my stomach has started hurting. I didn't think much of it, but then I started experiencing pregnancy symptoms. Somehow, I feel like my belly has... Happy tears are flowing. I would like to have a son that resembles Dear Husband.*

"Heok..."

A child?

Grid was more baffled than glad. It was confusing because it was a totally unexpected and unfamiliar experience. Then a notification window popped up.

[Do you want to honor the news of your wife's pregnancy?]

[The birth of a new life should be congratulated, but those with no sense of responsibility should keep in mind that they don't deserve to be a parent. Think carefully.]



## CHAPTER 240

---

Satisfy had some areas that were completely different from reality. If a user had a child in Satisfy, there could be various problems.

There were too many risk factors, such as neglecting reality by being too immersed in the child in the game or ignoring the child in the game because they were too busy playing. Only those who had established mature values were eligible to enjoy Satisfy's parenting system.

'Can I really do well?'

The Grid of the past would've said okay without thinking about it. But the current Grid realized the seriousness of the situation. He thought carefully about it.

'I...'

He was still too immature to be a parent. But he wanted Irene to be happy. She was one of the most precious people to him, despite being a person in virtual reality. Thanks to her, he learned how to love. Grid wanted to make her dream come true. He didn't want her to be disappointed.

'I also want the result of the love that I share with Irene.'

After a few hours of deliberation, Grid made a decision.

"I am grateful for the news of the pregnancy."

The notification windows immediately blinked and responded.

[Congratulations on your wife's pregnancy!]

[The preferences and abilities of the child will be affected from prenatal development.]

[What type of child do you want? The child you want and the child your wife wants will affect prenatal development. Work hard to communicate with your wife.]

“I wish my child...”

It wasn't that hard to imagine.

‘Someone different from me.’

He didn't want them to be petty or stupid. Grid had no talent and was narrow-minded, so he hoped that his own child wouldn't experience such an unfortunate life.

‘I want someone who resembles my wife, a child who is bright, generous, and pretty. First of all, I wish for a clever child to be born. Congratulations on your pregnancy. And thank you.’

Grid wrote it in the letter to Irene. It was difficult to find traces of his childhood in his careful expression. Grid would turn 28 years old in five months in real time. He was becoming a true adult with this pregnancy.

“Taemyeong means ‘fortune’ in the sense of a jackpot...”

There was no question that he still had no naming sense. Even so, it was fortunate that he only thought about Taemyeong.



A regular board meeting held at the head office of the S.A. Group.

The main agenda of the meeting was to set the budget for the Second National Competition to be held in Paris next year. At the end of the meeting, one member was brought up. Grid.

“It's actually Grid again!”

“Isn't the parenting system only activated for mature players?”

The executives heard the report from the operations team leader and expressed their anxiety. Recently, Grid was conducting himself as a legendary class, but the prejudice didn't easily disappear.

The executives had been watching Grid from the beginning and still saw him as that. Now he would have a child with an NPC? Just imagining it was terrible. They were worried about the worst situation.

“He will raise a child? This is ridiculous!”

Games had implemented a parenting system many times in the past. There was even a separate child raising simulation game. A typical example was Princess Mama. Such games didn’t make users feel any responsibility. Users could delete their child or neglect them. Such an act didn’t cause any moral issues either. The characters in a typical game were nothing more than 2D characters that acted and talked according to a given scenario.

Then what about the characters in Satisfy? The supercomputer Morpheus gave all Satisfy NPCs the perfect artificial intelligence. As a result, NPCs had thoughts and emotions. They were no different from humans.

It was only a matter of time until an immature user experienced the parenting system. If the users neglected or abused their children in the game, the creators couldn’t rule out the possibility of social problems.

The parenting system was a double-edged sword. Satisfy’s game would be better if used well, but public opinion would take a hit if it was exploited.

The development team arranged the parenting system so that only a very small number of users could experience it. It was based on the fact that the married couple’s liking was at the maximum, and the parenting system was designed to be activated only for users who had maximum respect for NPCs.

But Grid? The person who sent malicious emails to the group when he couldn’t make legendary items was selected for the parenting system! The executives were convinced that there was clearly an error. They couldn’t tolerate it.

A surprising figure emerged to defend Grid. It was Director Yoon Sangmin. In the past, he had a tendency to hate Grid more than anyone else.

“Don’t you know about the recent Grid? He has grown. He’s different from the past. So don’t worry.”

“We all know that his abilities have grown. Didn’t he win three gold medals and save

the kingdom from the golem army? What we are pointing out is a personality matter.”

“He has grown up personally.”

It was Director Yoon Sangmin.

The executives frowned.

“How do you know that?”

“You will quickly notice if you show a little interest and watch him.” Grid’s inner growth was something that could be seen just from his actions. “In the first place, the system chooses. This means that Grid is qualified, so there is no room to negotiate.”

“Cough...”

The executives stared dumbly. Director Yoon Sangmin, who calmed the turmoil, was very interested in Grid.

‘A human who learns and develops through the game.’

A typical human became an adult by learning and experiencing society. Then they had a tendency to spill out all their stress in games. There were many reasons why good humans in society would become notorious villains in games.

But Grid was a special case. He lacked social skills, but was growing through the game. He was a good example of a Satisfy user and could be used as a means of publicity. Of course, that was under the assumption that Grid accepted.



“Shit!”

The atmosphere of the White Wolf guild wasn’t great. They failed their quest because of an unexpected person, and their pride was hurt because one person wiped out the whole guild. Veradin encouraged the resentful and frustrated guild members.

“Don’t mind it. Grid is the best. It isn’t a shame to be defeated by him.”

That’s right. As the first ranked Kraugel maintained an air of mystery around him, Grid

had to be rated as the strongest for the moment. He was underestimated by the public because of his lacking control, but that wasn't necessarily true. No, it was great.

As Veradin said, it wasn't shameful for their small guild to be defeated by Grid, who was at the top. This was the obvious result.

However, the guild members were worried about Veradin. A month ago, Veradin had cleared a S+ grade quest and acquired the bones of the high ranking demonkin, Dantalian. In the battle against Grid, he had summoned the undead Dantalian using the bones.

It was his trump card. Even Grid showed worry.

Veradin was strong as long as he had Dantalian. It was amazing that he managed to annoy Grid for a while, despite not reaching level 300 yet. Veradin clearly demonstrated his abilities that were above his ranking.

The problem was that the guild members were weak. They weren't a help to Veradin at all. They were sorry to see Veradin dragged down because of useless subordinates. They couldn't lift their heads.

In this sober atmosphere, Kiki threw out a question.

"But Veradin, why didn't you report Grid to Earl Zebra?"

Grid was a duke of the Eternal Kingdom. It was a big problem if he was in the territory of the empire. If this was reported to the upper ranks, Grid would surely experience large problems. Veradin held a key for revenge, so Kiki wondered why he didn't use it.

"It isn't time yet."

Veradin answered vaguely and Kiki realized that he was thinking about a bigger picture.



The last time that Kraugel visited the western part of the Eternal Kingdom was eight months ago.

At that time, the west was completely a desert and it was infested with monsters. If he

took a step, he would be confronted with monsters. If he moved a little bit, he would be completely isolated.

But now the situation had changed. The scale of the desert was reduced and there were less monsters than before. It had turned into more ideal hunting grounds. Kraugel speculated that Grid had destroyed several giant worm nests after becoming lord of Reidan.

Kraugel had to admire it.

‘Grid is greater than the rumors say. After absorbing the Tzedakah Guild, he’s quickly growing his power.’

Kraugel also knew about Grid. He was a celebrity that most people in the world knew. However, he hadn’t paid Grid any special attention. Kraugel devoted himself entirely to adventuring and hunting, while Grid participated in external events and was judged to be a completely different style of user.

He didn’t care because he didn’t think he would become involved with Grid in Satisfy.

‘My inventory weight is at its limit. Is Reidan the only well-equipped city or village near here?’

In the last 10 days, Kraugel had killed the western monsters while heading for Reidan. It wasn’t to meet Grid, but to dispose of his loot.

“It’s an agricultural city.” Kraugel arrived at REidan and admired the cast fields of wheat stretching out. He never imagined that a city in the middle of the desert would’ve developed agriculture. ‘He was successful in clearing the desert and has an excellent ability in managing affairs.’

Grid showed great strength in the National Competition and in the golem army, but he was skilled in other areas as well. He was a legendary blacksmith, had top rankers as subordinates and even had great skills as a lord? He was truly a near-perfect figure.

‘Zibal isn’t equipped with things like this. The first user to become king might be Grid, not Zibal.’

Did Kraugel have any regrets? No. Kraugel was the type of person who enjoyed playing the game alone. He perceived that his areas of activities were completely different

from Grid's. Therefore, he didn't have a sense of crisis or competitiveness towards Grid.

*Step, step.*

Kraugel was crossing the fields to enter Reidan. At that time, an NPC holding a rake in one hand and a hoe in the other appeared and asked him.

"Who are you?"

"...?"



PDF by: traitorAIZEN